





# EVIL EMPEROR'S WILD CONSORT

BOOK 13

*Xiao Qi Ye*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Evil Emperor's Wild Consort

(废柴要逆天：魔帝狂妃)

by

Xiao Qi Ye

(萧七爷)

# Synopsis

---

She has come a long way.

Orphaned, born a weakling, and being the infamous good-for-nothing of Azure Dragon Country. Gu Ruoyun was the shame of the proud Gu household. Falsely accused of a crime she did not commit, she was betrayed by her family and beaten to death by her own grandfather. But life took a fateful twist on that very day — she was revived.

Newly awakened, she is now the Master of an ancient treasure that resides within her body. Precious cultivation pills, treasures beyond her wildest imagination and spiritual beasts, all within her grasp... She is the apple of the eye of all under the heavens, including that of a mysterious, handsome man.

Now she only has one goal — to conquer the world.

# Acknowledgement

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

## Chapter 1201: Ruins, Inheritance (18)

---

"Elder Bai!" A murderous light flashed in Feng Xiaoxiao's eyes as she said, "You must remember one thing, kill her only when you have a hundred percent gurantee! If you don't have that guarantee, don't make any moves. I won't give her even the slightest chance at all!"

"Understood, Eldest Lady!"

Elder Bai joined his fists. Suddenly, he seemed to remember something and said, "By the way, Eldest Lady, I have a rough sketch of the person you're seraching for."

Instantly, Feng Xiaoxiao's breathing quickened and the space between her brows which had held a murderous intent was instantly replaced by excitement.

"What did you say, you have news of him?"

Thud!

Her hand slammed heavily onto the desk as she rose to her feet in excitement. Her eyes were fixed squarely upon Elder Bai.

"Eldest Lady, I've scoured through the mainland and only one person matches your description!" Elder Bai looked at Feng Xiaoxiao. "The Grand Lord of Red Lotus Territory!"

"What?"

Feng Xiaoxiao was in shock.

The man that she has been searching for was the Grand Lord of Red Lotus Territory?

That glorious man with unlimited potential who even shocked the First City!

Feng Xiaoxiao gently pursed her lips and slowly closed her eyes. "I understand, you may leave now."

As the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley, she has long heard of the genius who had appeared on the mainland! Perhaps Grand Lord Hong Lian's power does not count for much in the First City, he had once utilized his power as a high-level Martial Supreme to escape despite being surrounded by countless Martial Saints at the time. He even managed to kill two Martial Saints in the process. This news was far too shocking.

This was how she had first heard about Grand Lord Hong Lian!

However, evidently, she has never met him!

Feng Xiaoxiao certainly never expected the man whom she had met when she left the First City for a trip to the secular world was actually the infamous Grand Lord Hong Lian!

"After being separated from you for so many years, I've finally found you."

Feng Xiaoxiao opened her eyes and a hint of sadness drifted through her gaze. "However, I never thought that you would turn out to be Grand Lord Hong Lian. According to rumors, Grand Lord Hong Lian already has a wife. Furthermore, he has been searching for her for more than twenty years..."

Yet, she just had to fall for a married man!

Feng Xiaoxiao felt a throbbing pain in her heart at the thought of this!

"However, I don't want to give up! After all, I've been searching for you for so many years. Even if you once had a wife, I want to try and see if I can enter your heart."

Besides, his wife was missing. This would be her chance ...

...

Gu Ruoyun leaned against an old tree in a shady mountain range before she slowly opened her eyes and sighed. "I never thought that the First City would turn out to be so big. It's even more vast

than the mainland outside. I've walked for nearly ten days and I'm nowhere close to Wind Valley at all. I don't know if Xiao Ye is waiting for me there now."

If she wishes to reach Wind Valley, she would need to go through Wind City! Wind City was also an organization which belongs to Wind Valley!

Gu Ruoyun rose to her feet at this thought and turned her gaze towards the sky. A dark and obscure light flashed in her eyes as she said, "It's getting late, I need to keep going. I hope I'll reach Wind City before it gets dark."

Without any further delay, she headed down the mountain.

...

A large and ancient gate stands tall and silent under the sky, simple and dignified as it guarded the entrance to Wind City. However, two guards were holding a portrait in their hands and diligently surveying every newcomer in Wind City outside the gate. When they realized that the woman in the painting was not there, they shook their heads and allowed the newcomers to enter Wind City.



## Chapter 1202: Ruins, Inheritance (19)

---

"Stop!"

The two guards quickly checked the portrait in their hands once Gu Ruoyun appeared. They looked at each other before turning their gaze towards Gu Ruoyun.

"Miss, our elder wishes to see you."

Elder?

Gu Ruoyun frowned as she asked, "What does your elder want with me?"

"This isn't something that we know. If you want to know the reason, come with us to meet our elder!" The guard sighed with relief. They never thought that they would find the woman in the portrait after so many days of inspection.

This way, they could give their elder an explanation.

"Lead the way."

Gu Ruoyun thought for a moment before she agreed to see the elder of Wind Valley.

She wants to find out why the elder of Wind Valley wishes to see her!

One of the guards made a welcoming gesture and led the way. The other guard had stayed behind to watch the gate.

At Wind City.

An old man sipped his tea as he sat in front of a table in a guest house's room. When the room's door was pushed open, his brows moved a little and he turned his gaze towards Gu Ruoyun who had followed the guard into the room.

"Lady Gu, I've been waiting for you."

The old man mildly curled the corners of his lips and smiled at

Gu Ruoyun who had just entered the room.

Gu Ruoyun's expression slowly sank as she looked at the old man in front of her and asked, "How did you know that I would be here?"

"Hehe," the old man chuckled. "Actually, I've sent men with your picture to many places other than Wind City to look for you. I never thought that I'd actually find you. Lady Gu, I've asked you to come here because I wish to discuss something with you."

"What is it?"

Gu Ruoyun furrowed her brows and asked.

"Wind Valley has taken an interest in your talents so we'd like to invite you to join Wind Valley. What do you think, Lady Gu?"

"Apologies." Gu Ruoyun smiled faintly but her eyes remained just as clear and cold as ever. "I've already rejected your offer back at the Medicine Sect! My answer remains the same, I won't join Wind Valley 1 so you better give up."

Elder Bai's eyes sharpened as a near-undetectable light flashed through his eyes. The corners of his lips had remained fixed in a smile. "Lady Gu, think about it. Joining Wind Valley will only bring you benefits and no disadvantages! Besides, you're aware of Wind Valley's prestige. As long as you're willing to pledge your allegiance to Wind Valley, we can give you a position where no one else is above you but our Master. Furthermore, no one would have the courage to touch you in the First City."

He paused before he continued to speak, "Furthermore, Lady Gu, your powers are at the level of an early-stage Martial Saint and there're countless powerful cultivators in the First City. You can imagine the dangers that you will face. If you agree to join Wind Valley, I assure you that no one would dare to cause trouble for you. My Lady has always appreciated talented individuals so she won't treat you unkindly."

There was an indifferent smile on Gu Ruoyun's face. Her gaze remained clear and cold as she exclaimed, "I enjoy my freedom and I don't want to be restricted. I appreciate the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley's kind offer but I must turn it down once again!"

"Lady Gu." Elder Bai's eyes sank. He slowly steadied his emotions and replied with a small smile. "You should stop rejecting Wind Valley's offer. I'll give you one more chance to think it over. Besides, I can assure you that Wind Valley won't restrict your freedom. You only need to supply Wind Valley with pills on a regular basis and that would be enough. Wind Valley will help you to take care of everything else. The freedom that you want? Wind Valley can give it to you."

## Chapter 1203: Ruins, Inheritance (20)

---

A clear and cold light flashed in Gu Ruoyun's eyes but her lucid and elegant features remained as indifferent as ever.

"In my opinion, joining any organization would cause me to be restricted! Hence, I will never agree to your request."

Besides, it was not worth giving up her freedom to devote her service to one mere Wind Valley alone.

"Since that's the case, Lady Gu, I hope that you won't forget your decision today."

Elder Bai's eyes sank and his voice no longer held its initial amiable tone. Instead, it was now tinged with a chilly air.

"If there's nothing else, I'll leave now."

Gu Ruoyun glanced at Elder Bai as she spoke in an indifferent tone.

"Please."

Elder Bai scoffed before closing his eyes and did not say anything more. Gu Ruoyun did not delay anymore either as she immediately turned around and headed out of the guest house room. She had not bothered to turn back and look at Elder Bai the entire time.

A murderous intent flashed across Elder Bai's eyes as he stared at Gu Ruoyun's disappearing figure. He had balled his hand on the table into a tight fist.

"Gu Ruoyun, I had given you one more chance. Since you didn't value it, don't blame Wind Valley for being merciless!"

Night time.

Under the clear moonlight.

Gu Ruoyun was seated on the bed with her eyes closed in meditation in a room at the guest house. A faint spiritual energy

circled around her and seeped into her body as she inhaled and exhaled.

Just then, she felt a sudden peculiar movement. Her brows twitched and she slowly opened her eyes.

"I never thought that someone would cause trouble for me the moment I set foot in Wind City. However, I wonder who on earth they could be?"

Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh!

Suddenly, countless figures smashed through the window and entered the room to stand in front of Gu Ruoyun.

Gu Ruoyun stared at the unwelcome guests before her and smiled indifferently. "Shall I guess who you are? Only Wind Valley is aware of my arrival in Wind City. If my guess is correct, you must be Feng Xiaoxiao's assassins! I never intended to become mortal enemies with Wind Valley yet you won't let me off."

From the moment Elder Bai had asked to see her, she knows that Wind Valley would definitely make a move against her.

She never thought that they would move so quickly!

That was right! She had previously refused to help Feng Yuqing because she does not want to have a total falling-out with Wind Valley.

However, that does not mean that she had made that decision because she was afraid of Wind Valley. Instead, she believes that there was no need for her to cause trouble for herself for the sake of someone whom she had just met!

"Hmph!"

The young leader of the group scoffed icily and did not reply to Gu Ruoyun's question. Instead, he attacked her immediately.

Boom!

A fist landed and the entire bed shattered into pieces. Gu Ruoyun

rose to the sky and moved threateningly towards the group with a cold look in her eye.

"You've sent a group of assassins at the exceeding state to deal with an early-stage Martial Saint like me! Wind Valley has really overestimated me."

Elder Bai had followed Feng Xiaoxiao's orders exactly. If he wants to move against Gu Ruoyun, he has to kill her in one strike. Otherwise, it would lead to endless trouble. This time, he had pulled out the big guns! The lowest ranked amongst the assassins sent to carry out this task were at the early-stage of the exceeding state!

Hence, Gu Ruoyun could not help but sigh in grief. She was not exactly on friendly terms with Feng Xiaoxiao but she could not help but admire this woman.

This woman was not the type of person who was extremely conceited or entitled. Instead, she was cautious in everything that she did. Feng Xiaoxiao knows that if she does not kill Gu Ruoyun this time, she could never be able to control her in the future! Hence, that was why the assassins she had sent were all cultivators at the exceeding state including one who was already at the late-stage of the exceeding state.

# Chapter 1204: Wind Valley (1)

---

Unfortunately...

Gu Ruoyun was not an average person!

Most early-stage Martial Saints would be so frightened at the sight of so many exceeding state cultivators that they would be unable to retaliate.

Even if she does not have her spiritual beasts on hand, no one could stop her if she wanted to escape.

Regardless of how cautious Feng Xiaoxiao was, she had still underestimated her!

"I don't have any trouble with Feng Xiaoxiao yet she has sent her subordinates to kill me. Since that's how she wants to play, I have no choice but to push back." Gu Ruoyun laughed icily as she slowly spoke. "Tianqiong, can you guys can handle these people?"

Whoosh!

As soon as she had spoken, two figures immediately appeared by her side.

One of them was very handsome and has a stately look on his face, carrying the awe-inspiring authority of a sovereign who had descended from the sky. The other was a cute and petite little lolita. Her powder-puff face was absolutely endearing. However, her eyes do not display the innocent and pure look that most children would have. All they could see was a cold and distant bloodlust as well as an infinite amount of murderous intent.

"Master." The Vermillion Bird curled the corners of her lips as her large eyes stared at the members of Wind Valley seriously. "Leave these people to Leader Tianqiong and I. They're nothing but a bunch of ants. So what if they have a late-stage Martial Saint in the exceeding state? I will still bash them up like dogs!"

Once she has finished speaking, the Vermillion Bird's tiny body suddenly charged towards the young man in front of her as quickly as a bolt of lightning. With a wave of her little hand, a ray of fire shot out from her palm and jetted straight towards the young man's face which was inches away from her.

Even though the little girl seems to be around five years of age, the young man who had experienced many battles could sense her power. He did not dare to show the slightest sign of carelessness. as he pulled his weapon out and brandished it at the Vermillion Bird's tiny body.

Clang!

The Vermillion Bird lifted her hand to catch the oncoming weapon while a smile flashed on her adorable little face. "Tsk, tsk. Are late-stage exceeding state cultivators all that great? I don't think that you were even born yet when I had proclaimed supremacy over the four corners of the earth! Even the tiny little Wind Valley has delusions of forcing the Master of the Four Divine Beasts into servitude? What wild fantasies you've got! A person of my Master's noble standing cannot be controlled by tiny little Wind Valley. Even though my Master isn't powerful enough at the moment, she will surpass everyone in your Wind Valley sooner or later."

The Vermillion Bird has great faith in Gu Ruoyun.

After all, Gu Ruoyun had not originated from the First City. Instead, she had come from a far more lowly mainland. However, she has achieved such great accomplishments by the age of twenty-four and had single-handedly shot down this entire world.

From the ancient times till this day, who else could possibly achieve such greatness?

Funnily enough, Wind Valley sure has some good ideas to actually want to force her Master into servitude?



If her Master does submit to them, does that not mean that they, the Four Divine Beasts, would become lower than humans?

No!

Their status would become twice below that of humans!

The Four Divine Beasts do not want this kind of ending.

Slam!

A wave of energy shot out from the Vermillion Bird's small hand and pushed the young man several steps back. He looked absolutely shocked as he stared at the Vermillion Bird's cute face in astonishment. He could not comprehend why he, a late-stage Martial Saint in the exceeding state, could not defeat a mid-stage Martial Saint!

"Do you know why you can't defeat me?" The Vermillion Bird pursed her lips. "That's because you humans use too many precious treasures to increase your power! It wouldn't be much of a problem if you had used those things once or twice but if you rely on them completely, that would result in an unstable foundation. That's why I can bash you up like dogs!"

The young man's face turned into an ugly shade before he finally said his first words since he smashed into the room, "Attack together! Kill them all!"

## Chapter 1205: Wind Valley (2)

---

Upon hearing the young man's orders, everyone behind him immediately charged towards the Vermillion Bird in front of him. At that moment, the entire guest room was filled with a cold and eerie murderous intent.

Gu Ruoyun stayed standing on the large, ruined bed as she stared coldly at the situation. Her eyes flashed with a clear and cold light.

"Bunch of foolish humans!"

The Vermillion Bird laughed icily. Her body then slowly enlarged as the crowd watched, turning into a flaming Firebird and tearing the entire room to pieces.

Roar!

The Vermillion Bird roared before she angrily hurled a mouthful of flames towards the humans in front of her. The ones at the lower rank of power were instantly burned to ashes from her flames. They never even had the chance to struggle...

"Now, I'm going to give you all a taste of the Vermillion Bird's firepower. Let's see if you foolish humans would still have the audacity to underestimate my Master!"

Each time the Vermillion Bird remembers the things that Elder Bai had said to Gu Ruoyun, she would feel infuriated. The flames on her body then burned brighter and brighter before it shot towards the entire group...

The young man's expression sank. With a wave of his sword, he sliced the oncoming flames in half.

As he was heaving a sigh of relief, the flames gathered towards him from both sides as if they had grown eyes and they would not rest until they had burned him to death!

"It seems that I don't need to do anything now."

The Azure Dragon Tianqiong slowly exclaimed. His handsome face carried a confident smile. "The Vermillion Bird can defeat these people on her own. Besides, it's about time we disciplined her..."

That young man might be at the late-stage of the exceeding state but since his foundation was unstable, he does not have the full power of a late-stage Martial Saint. He was only considered to be slightly more powerful than a mid-stage Martial Saint! Of course, if he were a fully-fledged late-stage Martial Saint in the exceeding state, both the Azure Dragon and the Vermillion Bird's powers were still enough to subdue him.

Slash!

The young man tried to forcefully slice the flames in half again but each time he cut the flames, they would join back quickly and attack him again.

He began to pant from exhaustion as he stared at the Vermillion Bird behind the flames with an ugly look on his face. "Your struggle is meaningless! I'd advise you to give up. Otherwise, our Second Young Master will never let you off!"

Gu Ruoyun nearly burst into laughter when she heard the young man's words.

If it was not for the fact that she was acquainted with Feng Yuqing, the young man might have fooled her.

"You say that your Second Young Master of Wind Valley wants to kill me?" Gu Ruoyun raised her brows as she stared at the pale young man with a forced smile.

"That's right!" The young man gritted his teeth and replied, "Our Second Young Master has taken a liking to you and wants to make you his concubine. That's why he had sent us to capture you! Our Valley Lord has always treasured the Second Young Master. If you continue to resist, Wind Valley will hunt you down and kill you."

Gu Ruoyun narrowed her eye. What a good strategy, getting someone else to do your dirty work!

Once this fellow knew that he had failed his mission, he had pushed the blame onto Feng Yuqing. Feng Yuqing has a reputation as a perverted hedonist! Even if this were to get out, everyone would undoubtedly believe the young man!

If she knew that it was Feng Yuqing who had wanted to attack her, it would certainly create a dispute between Wind Valley and herself. The Valley Lord would then personally attack her in order to protect Feng Yuqing!

Unfortunately, in all of Feng Xiaoxiao's rigorous schemes and deep foresight, she never anticipated that Gu Ruoyun and Feng Yuqing would already have a predestined meeting...

## Chapter 1206: Wind Valley (3)

---

"You don't need to push the blame on Feng Yuqing 1," Gu Ruoyun laughed icily as she continued, "Because I've already guessed the identity of the puppetmaster behind all of this! No one else would want to kill me aside from Feng Xiaoxiao."

The young man never thought that Gu Ruoyun would expose the truth at once. His expression changed but he stubbornly denied it, "I don't know what you're saying, we are not the Eldest Lady's subordinates. The Second Young Master was the one who had sent us here to capture you! It's best for you to come with us. Once you become the Second Young Master's concubine, you will enjoy endless luxuries and riches!"

"Go to hell!"

The Vermillion Bird's eyes spat fire when she saw that the damned humans had the audacity to humiliate Gu Ruoyun. She waved her hand and the flames, which were hovering on the side, once again hurled towards the young man.

This time, the young man could not defend himself on time. The flames were as hard as a hammer and tossed his body from the center of the guest room onto a wall, immediately carving a deep indentation in it.

"Are you sure that Feng Yuqing is the one who wants to kidnap me?" Gu Ruoyun turned towards the pale young man as she smiled and said, "If my memory serves, the trusted aide by Feng Yuqing's side are Feng Yi and Feng Wu. I've never seen any of you before."

The young man instantly widened his eyes and stared at Gu Ruoyun in disbelief.

This woman actually knows who the Second Young Master's trusted aides are? Is she acquainted with the Young Master?

That's impossible!

Didn't Elder Bai mention that this woman had only just arrived in the First City? How could she possibly have met the Second Young Master?

"Also..." Gu Ruoyun paused and smiled icily. "I've already promised Feng Yuqing that I would heal the wounds on his body. I had come here to pay him a visit. Since I'm going to meet him soon, why would he send someone here to capture me?"

The young man's heart shuddered with every word from Gu Ruoyun's mouth. His face has drained of color and his mouth trembled endlessly.

Elder Bai had instructed them that if they should fail, push the blame onto the Second Young Master. However, Elder Bai never mentioned that this woman would be acquainted with the Second Young Master and it seems their relationship was a friendly one...

"Vermillion Bird, he knows too much. Kill him."

Gu Ruoyun slowly turned around and no longer spared the young man a second look.

As the young man's heart began to fill with fear, the Vermillion Bird laughed eerily. "Human, it never ends well for those who offend my Master! Besides, my Master has told you too much. There's no other option but to make you into a sacrifice..."

Boom!

The flames carried a scorching heat and rained down towards the young man in an earth-shattering fashion. The young man did not even have the chance to speak before he was turned into ashes from the flames. Not even his body was left behind...

After that, the Vermillion Bird dealt with the rest of Wind Valley's members. After all, Gu Ruoyun had exposed the matter regarding Feng Yuqing to them too so she could not give anyone the chance to reveal this information!

"It seems that whether I help Feng Yuqing or not, Feng Xiaoxiao

won't let me off." Gu Ruoyun narrowed her eyes as a clear and cold light flashed across them. " Since that's the case, I choose to stand with Feng Yuqing."

Feng Xiaoxiao's first assassination attempt had failed. Next, she would probably send assassins at the refined state!

## Chapter 1207: Wind Valley (4)

---

Hence, she was forced to retaliate!

"I don't go looking for trouble but trouble comes to find me anyways. In order to prevent giving Feng Xiaoxiao any more chances to hunt me down, I'll have to make Feng Yuqing the Young Valley Lord!" Gu Ruoyun rubbed her chin and smiled indifferently. "I'll make my way towards Wind Valley tomorrow!"

The end of the battle had attracted the attention of a few other people. However, by the time they had arrived, all they could see was a complete mess on the ground. They could not tell what had happened.

After all that, Gu Ruoyun gave the guest house a few gold pieces as compensation and moved into a different room.

...

At the foot of the mountain in Wind Valley, two guards noticed Gu Ruoyun's approach and blocked her way.

"Halt."

Gu Ruoyun stopped and replied indifferently, "Tell Feng Yuqing that Gu Ruoyun is here to see him."

"Gu Ruoyun? You're Gu Ruoyun, the one that the Eldest Lady wants to meet?"

Evidently, the two guards have heard of Gu Ruoyun's name and a sense of shock flashed across their faces. They quickly recomposed themselves and exclaimed bluntly, "I'm afraid that the Second Young Master cannot see you! You should come with us and see our Eldest Lady first!"

Gu Ruoyun's eyes sank. "I'm here to visit Feng Yuqing, not Feng Xiaoxiao. If you're going to stop me from meeting Feng Yuqing, I'm afraid that I shall have to force my way in."



"Damned girl, we've allowed you some dignity yet you choose to be shameless!"

Instantly, the guards' expression darkened and they glared fiercely at Gu Ruoyun.

"Our Eldest Lady had shown you respect by asking to see you yet you don't know what's good for you. You're merely an outsider who had risen in the secular world. Our Eldest Lady wants to meet you because she holds you in high esteem. Otherwise, do you really think that you would be granted the opportunity to meet our Eldest Lady based on your position? There are way too many people who want to meet our Eldest Lady yet you dare to refuse the opportunity. Are you an idiot?"

The guard laughed icily and stepped forward to grab Gu Ruoyun. "You are going to come with me and meet the Eldest Lady!"

Boom!

Just as the guard approached Gu Ruoyun, a wave of energy exploded from her being and threw his body out of the way.

"Damned girl, you can go to hell!"

The other guard saw how his companion had been bullied and was instantly enraged. Just as he was about to step forward, an elderly voice chimed in, "What's going on?"

The guards shook upon hearing that voice. They quickly turned around to face the old man who was approaching them and replied with reverence, "Elder Feng, this woman from the secular world is treating the Wind Valley in a condescending manner! She even attacked us, what audacity! I..."

"Master, what are you doing here?"

Before the guard could finish his explanation, he was shocked into foolishness by Elder Feng's greeting.

Master?

Did I hear that right? Is Elder Feng calling this woman Master?

How can this be?

Who is Elder Feng? He's the Chief Physician of Wind Valley! His medicinal skills are incomparably powerful and he could even bring a dying man back from the clutches of death! Even the Valley Lord would treat him with respect yet now, the powerful Elder Feng is actually this woman's disciple? Isn't this woman the one that the Eldest Lady wants to attack?"

"Master, are you here to visit me?" Elder Feng hurriedly rushed to greet her. His elderly face no longer displayed the arrogance during their first meeting. In fact, it was replaced with admiration.

Elder Feng was the elder from Wind Valley that Gu Ruoyun had met at the Medicine Sect! He was the one who had a pill refinement competition with her and had lost to her in the end.

## Chapter 1208: Wind Valley (5)

---

However, when had she become his Master?

Gu Ruoyun was also in shock as she stared foolishly at the excited-looking Elder Feng who was running towards her. "This, are you mistaken? I don't think I'm your Master!"

After all, this old fellow had repeatedly gone against her back then at the Medicine Sect.

Now, has he not changed his stripes a little too quickly?

"Master, have you forgotten when we were at the Medicine Sect, I had especially paid you a visit before I left and asked to be your disciple. You had rejected me then but it's ok, I have confidence in myself! I'll make you accept me as your disciple sooner or later!" Elder Feng's entire face was filled with smiles and flattery as he spoke.

Gu Ruoyun thought for a moment and remembered that something like that had indeed happened. However, she had not accepted him as her disciple then.

"By the way, Master, why are you being blocked outside the gate?" Elder Feng seemed to remember something and he turned around to glare fiercely at the two dumbfounded guards. "You two useless things, can't you even recognize my Master? You had the audacity to block her way! Would you like to stop working here? If you don't want to work here anymore, tell me, I'll let you go to the back of the mountain and feed the wolves!"

The two guards jumped in fright and trembled all over. They never thought that Gu Ruoyun would be acquainted with Elder Feng.

When they remembered how they had treated Gu Ruoyun, the fear in their hearts deepened. They threw themselves and knelt down on the ground with a thud, trembling as they pleaded, "Elder

Feng, please forgive us, we really didn't know that Gu Ruoyun is Elder Feng's Master. If we had known, we would never have been so bold even if you had given us a hundred doses of liquid courage."

"What's the use in you pleading with me?" Elder Feng laughed icily. "You should be begging her! If she agrees to spare you, I'll spare you!"

Upon hearing this, the two guards ignored all their dignity and hurriedly turned towards Gu Ruoyun to kowtow. They cried, "Lady Gu, we were blind and did not recognize you so we had offended you by mistake. Please forgive us."

Gu Ruoyun glanced at them in an indifferent manner before she turned away and looked at Elder Feng. "I'm here to see Feng Yuqing, please take me to him."

"Err..."

Elder Feng was shocked.

How was I not aware that Master and the Second Young Master are acquainted with each other?

Actually, Gu Ruoyun has a reason for being bold enough to ask Elder Feng to lead her to Feng Yuqing.

She never forgot what that evildoer had once told her back at the Medicine Sect.

Elder Feng may be arrogant and condescending to others but he has one good trait! That was his loyalty to Wind Valley! Do not judge him simply because he had stayed by Feng Xiaoxiao's side, this was because Feng Xiaoxiao was the Young Valley Lord of Wind Valley. As an elder of Wind Valley, he was duty-bound to ensure her safety and listen to her orders.

That does not mean that he was Feng Xiaoxiao's trusted aide.

He had stayed by Feng Xiaoxiao out of his sense of duty to protect the soon-to-be heir of Wind Valley. She must not run into any

danger!

If Feng Yuqing was the heir to Wind Valley instead, Elder Feng would do the same!

"Master, what is your connection to the Second Young Master?" Elder Feng eyed Gu Ruoyun in a peculiar manner as his heart filled with hesitation.

Knowing the Second Young Master's hedonistic ways, could he have fooled around with my Master and angered her enough that she would storm in here to kill him?

It's possible!

Elder Feng secretly came to this conclusion.

## Chapter 1209: Wind Valley (6)

---

"I have some business with him."

Gu Ruoyun replied indifferently, clearly unwilling to reveal anything to Elder Feng.

Elder Feng suddenly felt apprehensive. He carefully eyed Gu Ruoyun, trying to figure out what the Second Young Master could have done to offend her which resulted in her storming into Wind Valley!

"Master, I'm not sure what grudge you have against the Second Young Master but no matter the Second Young Master's abilities, it does not change the fact that the Valley Lord loves him. Therefore..." Elder Feng exclaimed in confusion, "If you really want to cause trouble for the Second Young Master, the Valley Lord would definitely step out to protect him."

Gu Ruoyun's gaze landed upon Elder Feng as she slowly replied. "I've agreed to meet him here so just take me to him. That's all you need to do."

Agreed?

Elder Feng was thoroughly shocked. Is Master saying that she and the Second Young Master have an agreement? Could it be that their relationship is not what I think it is?

In the end, Elder Feng fortified his heart and said, "Come with me, Master."

"I am not your Master."

After hearing Elder Feng address her in that manner, Gu Ruoyun furrowed her brows and said, "You don't have to call me that."

"No, no, no." Elder Feng shamelessly exclaimed. "Master, I know that my powers aren't strong enough and that's why you won't acknowledge me. It's alright, I'll work hard and earn the right to

become your disciple."

A sense of exasperation flashed across Gu Ruoyun's face as she stared at Elder Feng's shameless face.

"Take me to Feng Yuqing first."

"Yes, Master."

When Elder Feng saw how she had not forced him to change his manner of address, his expression turned into one of flattery as he quickly led the way.

Elder Feng jabbered on and on the entire way and did not stop talking at all.

In the beginning, Gu Ruoyun had given him a few half-hearted replies. In the end, she could no longer be bothered and would rather keep her mouth shut, ignoring the old man's long-winded ramblings.

Previously, they had interacted while they were at the Medicine Sect as well. However, she never thought that the once proud Elder Feng would have such an annoying personality. She really could not understand how the members of Wind Valley could have tolerated him...

At the North Park. The scene was desolate and there were only two servants sweeping the fallen leaves in the courtyard.

Ever since the Second Young Master of Wind Valley's power had been crippled, he decided to move to the remote North Park that same year. No matter how much the Valley Lord had tried to stop him, it was useless! He had to leave him to it!

To ensure a peaceful environment for his only son, the Valley Lord had issued an order declaring that no one was allowed to enter the North Park. Hence, without Elder Feng's escort, Gu Ruoyun would never have been able to enter it!

"I never thought that the dignified Young Sir of Wind Valley

would be living in a place like this."

Gu Ruoyun laughed icily as she stared at the bleak and declining conditions of North Park. Her lips were curled into a small angle.

Elder Feng felt a little awkward. "Master, the Second Young Master had insisted on moving here. No matter how much the Valley Lord had tried to persuade him, it was useless. The Valley Lord had no choice but to leave him in his stubborn ways."

He paused for a bit before he turned towards the quiet side room in front of him and said, "We're here, this is the Second Young Master's residence! Master, I still don't know how you and the Second Young Master know each other. Such a powerful person like yourself shouldn't be acquainted with a good-for..."

The words 'good-for-nothing' nearly slipped out but Elder Feng managed to stop himself in time. He chuckled and his eyes darted back and forth. "I'm really curious, how do you know each other"



## Chapter 1210: Wind Valley (7)

---

Gu Ruoyun smiled and did not say much. She then pushed the door open and entered the room.

A man dressed in embroidered robes was sitting in front of a desk in the room. He had a book in his hand and was reading quietly. He became aware of Gu Ruoyun's arrival and his handsome face lit up with a smile. "You're here?" he exclaimed in a frail voice.

Gu Ruoyun nodded, "I'm here to fulfill my promise and help you to restore your powers."

"Alright, I've been waiting for you."

He smiled gently but his eyes showed his excitement.

Elder Feng listened to their conversation and his head felt foggy as he asked, "What are you saying? Restoring whose powers?"

Furthermore, he does not know why but the Second Master seems very different today...

Only now did Feng Yuqing notice Elder Feng who was standing close behind Gu Ruoyun. He was shocked but he did not comment on it.

"Lady Gu had once promised me that she would come to Wind Valley and restore my powers! I've been waiting for her for a while now."

"..."

Elder Feng was dazed and he turned towards Gu Ruoyun with an astonished look on his face. "Master, is this true?" He asked in disbelief. "Can you really help restore the Second Young Master's powers?"

Usually, Elder Feng looks down upon the hedonistic Feng Yuqing but at the end of the day, he was the Second Young Master of Wind Valley and the only son! If his powers had not been crippled, the

position of Young Valley Lord would never have fallen into Feng Xiaoxiao's hands!

Hence, when he heard that there was a chance to heal Feng Yuqing's injury, his heart filled with excitement.

"Let me have a look at his injury first."

Gu Ruoyun slowly approached Feng Yuqing. The two men then watched as she gently checked his pulse. After a long pause, she released her grip and said, "He had sustained heavy injuries at that time. Did you make him consume anything with a Resurrection Blossom?"

She looked calmly at Elder Feng as she slowly asked.

Elder Feng was shaken and nodded. "That's right! I had used the Resurrection Blossom to save his life! Are you saying that there was something wrong with the Resurrection Blossom?"

"No!" Gu Ruoyun shook her head. "If you had not used the Resurrection Blossom to save him, he might not be alive right now. However, the Resurrection Blossom need to absorb his spiritual energy in order to grow. This is the real reason why he has turned into a good-for-nothing."

"Can he be saved, Master?"

Elder Feng felt melancholic, he never thought that he was responsible for crippling Feng Yuqing's powers!

Of course, as Gu Ruoyun said, if Elder Feng had not used the Resurrection Blossom to save Feng Yuqing's life, the Second Young Master would be dead by now!

"I have a way to help him." Gu Ruoyun then turned towards Feng Yuqing. "Your powers are being absorbed by the Resurrection Blossom! As long as we pull the Resurrection Blossom out, I can restore his powers..."

Hearing this, Elder Feng continued to speak dazedly, "If we do

this, without the Resurrection Blossom, the Second Young Master would..."

He did not finish the rest of his sentence but Elder Feng knew that Gu Ruoyun understood what he meant.

"His wound isn't much of a problem," said Gu Ruoyun as she curled her lips calmly. "I can heal it!"

Even without the Resurrection Blossom, Gu Ruoyun was certain that she could heal Feng Yuqing.

"Is there anything I can help with, Master?"

Elder Feng's eyes lit up when he heard Gu Ruoyun's explanation. He then stared at Gu Ruoyun with adoration. "I, your disciple, will do everything I can to help you in whatever you need."

## Chapter 1211: Wind Valley (8)

---

"Sure!"

Gu Ruoyun gently nodded. "I want to turn the Resurrection Blossom into a Resurrection Pill! At that point, I'll need you to help me watch Feng Yuqing."

"Alright."

Elder Feng nodded gravely.

Even though he was on Feng Xiaoxiao's side, Feng Yuqing was the Valley Lord's only son. If they could cure him, the Valley Lord would be very happy indeed.

"Once the Resurrection Blossom has been taken out, his life will be in danger. When that time comes, I will use a silver needle to seal his body. He will then appear to be dead! You must remember to not let anyone disturb him!"

Gu Ruoyun raised her head and looked at Elder Feng as she said, "I will then need to be in closed-door cultivation for three days! I will refine the Resurrection Pill in three days!"

"I understand, Master. Rest assured and go ahead, I won't let anyone disturb the Second Young Master." Elder Feng's intonation carried a determination like never before. His eyes were filled with assurance as he replied.

"You must remember to not pull the silver needle out. Otherwise, not only will his powers never return, he will die instantly!" A light of conviction flashed across Gu Ruoyun's eyes as she stared at Elder Feng's elderly face and issued the instruction. "Anyone who comes here must not be allowed to touch him!"

When Elder Feng saw the serious look on Gu Ruoyun's face, he felt very nervous. He made a secret vow that he would never let anyone disturb the Second Young Master.

"Find me a place where I won't be disturbed and I will refine a pill for him! Because the Resurrection Blossom has absorbed too much of his powers, it won't be easy for me to refine it into a pill. That's why I will need three days' time."

"Master, go to my territory. No one will disturb you there and you can refine the pill in peace." Elder Feng's elderly expression was filled with determination. "Don't worry, I will guard the Second Your Master for the next three days."

Gu Ruoyun nodded. "I will extract the Resurrection Blossom from his body now."

...

At South Park.

Unlike the desolate air in the North Park, the South Park's courtyard was bustling and exquisite. There was a multi-story pavilion and countless handmaidens and footboys were walking around the place.

At that moment in a side room at the courtyard, Feng Xiaoxiao furrowed her brows. Her beautiful, dignified features were enveloped with a light of indifference. After a long pause, she opened her mouth to speak, "Elder Bai, those people you sent last night have been gone for quite a while now. Why haven't they returned?"

Elder Bai knitted his brows. Logically speaking, those men should have returned very quickly after finishing their mission. Why have they not received any news?

"Eldest Lady, maybe they've failed?"

Elder Bai did not dare to imagine the answer to that.

After all, the men he had sent were all powerful cultivators of Wind Valley. If those men had failed, how much power does Gu Ruoyun have?

Feng Xiaoxiao's expression changed. "Elder Bai, have you forgotten what I've told you?" she replied with a cold look on her face. "You must succeed! There's no room for failure or it would bring a great disaster upon us. That woman's talents are far too horrifying. Even I cannot help but acknowledge that she is indeed an absolute genius!"

Unfortunately, she was unable to utilize a genius like her.

What was the point in leaving her alive then?

"Eldest Lady, don't you worry, I've instructed them to put the blame on Feng Yuqing if they fail! By then, if Gu Ruoyun does wish to exact her revenge, she would only take it out on Feng Yuqing. When she arrives in Wind Valley to collect Feng Yuqing's debt, she would certainly draw the Valley Lord's ire. We can then use the Valley Lord's hand to kill her!"

## Chapter 1212: Wind Valley (9)

---

Feng Xiaoxiao's face, which was initially calm, changed greatly when she heard this. "Idiot!" she shouted angrily.

Her shout shocked Elder Bai into a daze. He simply could not understand what he had done to draw the Eldest Lady's ire.

"Are you not an idiot?" Feng Xiaoxiao slammed her hand on the table and exclaimed with an ugly look on her face. "How could a cunning woman like Gu Ruoyun possibly believe your false charges so easily? If you hadn't said a thing, she would not have any proof that Wind Valley had been behind it. Even if she has her guesses, she would not use these guesses to conclude Wind Valley's actions! Yet you had put Feng Yuqing's name right out. While it does kill two birds with one stone, it also reveals that Wind Valley was behind the assassination attempt!"

A raging flame burned in her heart as she continued her scolding with a cold look on her face, "Furthermore, you had met her that day and tried to recruit her. You then send assassins to her on the same night. She doesn't need to overanalyze things to know that we were the ones who had sent the assassins and not that good-for-nothing Feng Yuqing! More importantly, you want to use Father's hand to kill Gu Ruoyun? Do you think that scenario would be possible? That woman is so cunning, why would she walk into a trap? She would never walk into Wind Valley while her powers are at a weak stage and give herself up so stupidly!"

Just as Feng Xiaoxiao was chastizing Elder Bai, an anxious voice came rushing into the room.

"Eldest Lady, I have some news to report!"

Feng Xiaoxiao took a deep breath, looked at the person in front of her and asked, "What is it?"

"Eldest Lady, someone has just informed me that the woman

you've been searching for, Gu Ruoyun, has arrived in Wind Valley. Furthermore, Elder Feng has brought her to see the Second Young Master..."

"What?"

Feng Xiaoxiao was dazed as her pretty eyes widened, filled with disbelief.

Elder Bai was also dazed for several seconds before he burst into laughter. "Eldest Lady, you think too highly of this woman's intelligence. She's not as smart as you thought she was. She believed the Wind Valley assassins' words and has come to make Feng Yuqing pay. Hahaha!"

Feng Xiaoxiao racked her brain, trying to figure out a crucial point in all of this. However, no matter how hard she tried, she could not seem to understand why Gu Ruoyun would make her way to Wind Valley?

When has her intelligence regressed to such a degree?

Could she have believed in such an inferior lie?

"Impossible, this is definitely impossible!" Feng Xiaoxiao shook her head and fell silent. "There must be something that we're not aware of. A smart woman like Gu Ruoyun would never walk into a trap."

Elder Bai laughed disdainfully, curled his lips and said, "Eldest Lady, don't overestimate her! Based on my conversation with her yesterday, I could tell that she's not that intelligent! Now that she has come to cause trouble for the Second Young Master, she has clearly been fooled by our lies. However, I never expected Elder Feng to help her and lead her to the Second Young Master. Perhaps he has turned traitor?"

Elder Feng?

A glint flashed in Feng Xiaoxiao's eyes, she has finally found the unusual point in this matter.



"Elder Bai, I believe that something isn't right about this! I am well aware of Elder Feng's loyalty to Wind Valley so how could he have turned against us? All these years, the reason why I've never been able to truly recruit Elder Feng was because he is far too loyal to Wind Valley. No matter how unsatisfied he is with Feng Yuqing, he would never let anyone harm him. I believe that this matter isn't as simple as it seems."

## Chapter 1213: Wind Valley (10)

---

"Eldest Lady," Elder Bai sneered and his entire face was filled with ridicule. "Why don't we head over to the Second Young Master's residence? We'll know the truth if we don't we stay here and continue the confusion. The Second Young Master is already a good-for-nothing and is of no threat to you. Since that's the case, let's save him this one time. Perhaps we might even leave a good impression on the Valley Lord."

Feng Xiaoxiao fell silent for a moment before she gently nodded.

No matter what Gu Ruoyun's plans were, they only need to investigate to find out the truth...

"Come, let's make our way to the North Park and check on my beloved little brother."

Feng Xiaoxiao gently curled the corners of her lips as a cold light flashed in her eyes. She said nothing more and headed out of the room.

At the North Park.

Elder Feng was standing guard outside the side room's door like a statue. After his experience with Gu Ruoyun at the Medicine Sect's general meeting, he now holds a deep admiration towards her and would follow her orders through seriously.

A group of figures suddenly approached him from outside the courtyard. A light of astonishment flashed in his eyes and he walked up to greet them without thinking too much about it. "Eldest Lady, Elder Bai, what are you doing here?"

Feng Xiaoxiao looked at Elder Feng who was standing guard and smiled. "Elder Feng, I'm here to visit Yuqing. After all, it's been a while since he has left the North Park. As his older sister, I should show some concern to my little brother, right?"

"Haha, there certainly isn't anything wrong with showing

concern for the Second Young Master, Eldest Lady. However, the Second Young Master is unable to receive any visitors for now. Please come back in three days' time, Eldest Lady."

Elder Feng laughed. He was not completely aware of Feng Xiaoxiao's actions so he really thought that she had come here out of genuine concern for Feng Yuqing.

"Hmph!"

Elder Bai has long felt a strong dislike towards Elder Feng. He scoffed icily and said, "Elder Feng, I heard that you've brought an outsider into Wind Valley and led them to the Second Young Master's courtyard? What is your relationship with that person that you would give her so much help?"

"It's like this," Elder Feng did not spare Elder Bai a second look as he turned towards Feng Xiaoxiao. "Eldest Lady, you've met that young lady as well," he said, "She's the woman who had defeated me in the Medicine Sect's general meeting and successfully refined a pill! She's here to restore the Second Young Master's powers. We are now at the crucial point of the process so please come back in three days, Eldest Lady!"

"Haha, what a joke!"

Elder Bai burst into laughter and butted into the conversation before Feng Xiaoxiao could reply, "How can you be sure that this woman is sincerely trying to help the Second Young Master? I heard that the Second Young Master had secretly sent assassins after her last night so she's here to take her revenge! I advise you to quickly step out of the way. What if something happens to the Second Young Master, do you think that the Valley Lord would forgive you?"

Hearing this, Elder Feng was completely dumbfounded.

The Second Young Master had sent assassins after Master? Why didn't Master say anything about it? Besides, knowing my Master's

personality, if the Second Young Master really wanted to assassinate her, would she be talking cheerfully with him?

"Elder Bai!"

Elder Feng had treated Feng Xiaoxiao with courtesy but when it comes to Elder Bai, there was no need for him to remain civil.

Hence, he furrowed his brows and stared at Elder Bai irritably. "If you don't have any definitive evidence, don't speak without thinking! Gu Ruoyun is definitely not here to kill the Second Young Master, I believe that she can help him!"

He waved his sleeves once he had spoken and continued with a sunken look on his face. "Please go back, I've promised her that I won't let anyone disturb the Second Young Master!"

## Chapter 1214: Wind Valley (11)

---

"Elder Feng!"

Elder Bai was enraged and he replied in a cold voice, "Do you know what you're doing? What benefits has this woman offered you to make you help her so much? If you continue to block us from entering, the Second Young Master's life will be in grave danger! Are you going to abandon him like this?"

"Hmph!"

Elder Feng scoffed and ignored the old man. His eyes then turned towards Feng Xiaoxiao.

"Eldest Lady, you of all people should know what kind of person I am! Even if I betray everyone in this world, I will never betray Wind Valley! Please believe me this one time! I would never want to hurt the Second Young Master!"

Feng Xiaoxiao fell silent. After a long pause, she raised her delicate and pretty features, looked at Elder Feng's elderly face and curled her lips indifferently. "Elder Feng, let us go in and have a look. As long as I can see that Yuqing is safe and sound, I'll leave!"

Elder Feng's expression changed greatly.

The Second Young Master was currently in a state of deathlike suspended animation. If they saw him now, it would be impossible to explain the situation to them!

Feng Xiaoxiao's eyes darkened at the look on Elder Feng's face. Could the situation be like what Elder Bai had said? Was Gu Ruoyun really here to murder Feng Yuqing? That cannot be right, she wouldn't be so stupid to kill someone in Wind Valley. Doing so would just be digging her own grave!

Besides, she had the ability to convince Elder Feng to trust her so much that he would stand guard outside the door and stop everyone from coming in...

"No!"

When the group insisted on making their way into the room, Elder Feng quickly blocked their way and exclaimed with an ugly look on his face. "You can't go in! If you force your way in, you'll hurt the Second Young Master!"

Feng Xiaoxiao's eyes flickered but her expression continued to display a gentle smile. That smile was like the wind, ethereal and faint.

"Elder Feng, don't forget that you're a member of Wind Valley."

Feng Xiaoxiao may have been smiling when she said these words but the frostiness in her voice made Elder Feng's body shake.

"You've stayed by my father's side for so many years, you should know how much he treasures Yuqing. Even after Yuqing had turned into a good-for-nothing, he still protected him! If anything bad were to happen to Yuqing, can you bear the responsibility?"

She lifted her head but there was no longer a gentle smile on her face. Her beautiful eyes were now filled with a stern air.

Elder Feng's expression shook before he frowned and said, "Eldest Lady, no matter what you say, I will not let you in for the sake of the Second Young Master's safety!"

"Hahaha!"

Elder Bai burst into laughter again. "Elder Feng, are you sure that you want to do this? Fine, since that's the case, we're going to storm right in. I'd love to see what you've done to the Second Young Master!"

Boom!

Elder Bai's body turned into a sharp sword before he charged towards Elder Feng.

Clash!

Elder Feng pulled his weapon out and blocked Elder Bai's attack.

The sheer force of their encounter caused an explosion, turning the surrounding trees into dust.

"I've told you, I'm not letting you in!" Elder Feng's expression darkened and he snapped fiercely, "If you insist on doing so, I have no choice but to raise my hand to stop you! Elder Bai, you should think this through thoroughly. Offending someone like me who is constantly by the Valley Lord's side won't end well for you!"

"Haha!" Elder Bai burst into laughter. "You've joined forces with an outsider to try and harm the Second Young Master, this is a single drawn offense. Do you think that you will have any position in the Valley Lord's heart to speak of? All these years, you've used the Valley Lord's trust to rain tyrannical abuse over Wind Valley. Everyone had to give way to you but I never thought that you would be so ungrateful until you wouldn't even spare the Second Young Master! I've already sent some men to inform the Valley Lord of this. You will receive the Valley Lord's wrath very soon!"

## Chapter 1215: Wind Valley (12)

---

Elder Feng's expression changed over and over again.

Elder Bai's words made sense to him!

No matter how much the Valley Lord trusts him, there were some taboos which he could never violate!

That taboo was the Second Young Master!

If Elder Bai had really summoned the Valley Lord, he might not be able to stop these people at all. However, the Master had mentioned that no matter what, he must prevent anyone from disturbing the Second Young Master. Otherwise, if they removed the silver needle, the Second Young Master could never be revived from the dead even if the gods were to arrive!

"Eldest Lady, I've stayed by your side for so many years, don't you trust me at all?"

Elder Feng turned towards Feng Xiaoxiao. His face was filled with disappointment as he asked in a bitter voice.

"It's not that I don't trust you, I'm just worried that you've been deceived by Gu Ruoyun." Feng Xiaoxiao's eyes darkened. "Therefore, I will only leave after I've seen Yuqing. Don't worry, I just need to see him once. If I see that he's safe and sound, I'll lead everyone out of here."

Elder Feng shook his head and shut his eyes.

"Eldest Lady, I know that you're worried about the Second Young Master but I really can't let you in! Otherwise, the Second Young Master's life will be in danger!"

Three days!

He just needs to hold on for three days. Once Gu Ruoyun returns, this misunderstanding will be wiped off.

"Get out of the way!"



Elder Bai bellowed and waved his hand fiercely towards Elder Feng's chest.

The power from his hit was sharp, enveloped in a faint layer of spiritual energy. His eyes were filled with ferocity and no longer displayed their initial gentleness.

"Hmph!"

Elder Feng scoffed as he watched Elder Bai closing in on him. He raised his hand to stop Elder Bai's hand as he exclaimed gloomily, "I won't touch the Eldest Lady but with you, I have no need to exercise patience!"

Boom!

Their hands clashed against one another. Elder Bai's body stumbled backward as a sliver of blood trickled from the corner of his lips. He then glared icily at Elder Feng.

In all of Wind Valley, Elder Feng's powers were second only to the Valley Lord. Elder Bai was no match for him!

"Enough!"

Feng Xiaoxiao furrowed her willowy brows and narrowed her eyes as she glared at the two elders icily. "It won't help matters if you two fight here. We will make a decision when my father arrives!"

After saying her piece, she turned towards Elder Feng and asked, "Elder Feng, I'll give you one last chance. Will you let us pass? If you're really going to wait for my father to arrive, his anger isn't something that you can handle."

"I'm sorry, Eldest Lady, I can't let you pass."

Elder Feng continued to block the way to the room and his face was serious as he stood tall like a sculpture. "I believe that in three days, you will understand that my actions were the right one! Prior to that, I can't let you pass!"

Feng Xiaoxiao pursed her lips and laughed icily. "Alright, I hope that you won't regret your decision! However, Elder Feng, I really never thought that you would turn out to be that kind of a person! I am sorely disappointed in you!"

The woman's gentle voice was tinged with clear disappointment and caused Elder Feng's heart to tremble.

He closed his eyes for a long while before opening them again. A wave of determination filled his eyes but he did not say another word.

"The Valley Lord has arrived!"

A loud cry echoed throughout the sky. The crowd watched as a handsome man in white robes traveled through the air. He has a tall and imposing body and emitted an air of domineering stateliness.

## Chapter 1216: Wind Valley (13)

---

Two armed guards were standing behind the Valley Lord. Neither of them showed any sign of emotion on their face as they guarded him loyally from behind.

One of the guards was the person who had announced the Valley Lord's arrival.

The white-robed man slowly walked towards them. A domineering atmosphere of the highest quality spread out with every step that he took, causing everyone around him to lower their heads.

This was a refined state cultivator, just that one bout of coercion could easily subdue others.

"Can anyone explain to me what's going on here?"

The Valley Lord's eyes scanned across every face from all for corners of the area as he spoke in a cold and distant voice.

"Reporting to the Valley Lord," Elder Bai sent Elder Feng an ugly glare as he turned towards the Valley Lord and replied, "Elder Feng has conspired with an outsider in an attempt to harm the Second Young Master. That outsider is implementing a form of horrible torture upon the Second Young Master in that room. Elder Feng has refused to let us in and does not allow us to check on the Second Young Master at all! Please, Valley Lord, support our cause!"

Upon hearing this, the Valley Lord's cold and distant eyes turned towards Elder Feng before he asked with a cold bite in his voice, "Is this true?"

"Valley Lord," Elder Feng joined his fists with an ugly look on his face. "It's like this. You probably remember that genius, Gu Ruoyun, whom I've mentioned to you before. Gu Ruoyun has arrived in Wind Valley and can help restore the Second Young

Master's powers. That's why I'm helping her."

Elder Bai sneered and exclaimed disdainfully, "Elder Feng, if it's really as you've said, why won't you let us see him? If she really does have the power to save the Second Young Master, we won't disturb him but you? You won't even let us look at him. Aren't you conspiring with her to harm the Second Young Master? What else could it be?"

"This..." Elder Feng was at a loss for words. He then continued, "Valley Lord, please believe me. My days here reflect my loyalty to Wind Valley! I would never have any intentions of hurting the Second Young Master! If you really insist on barging into the room, the Second Young Master will die!"

The Valley Lord fell silent and no one could tell what lay beneath his cold features. He did not say a word.

"Father." Feng Xiaoxiao looked at Elder Feng before she walked towards the Valley Lord. Her voice was light and gentle like the wind as it slowly echoed throughout the silent courtyard. "I trust Elder Feng, he would never hurt my little brother."

Elder Bai was in shock, he never thought that Feng Xiaoxiao would help Elder Feng. Were they not supposed to deal with Gu Ruoyun? Clearly, Elder Feng has now chosen to stand on Gu Ruoyun's side.

Why was Feng Xiaoxiao backing Elder Feng now?

Elder Feng never thought that Feng Xiaoxiao would ultimately stand up for him and sent her a grateful look. After all, based on his earlier behavior, it was already good enough that Eldest Lady had not complained to the Valley Lord about him, what more stand up for him.

"However..." Feng Xiaoxiao's eyes darted back and forth. "Based on my understanding of Gu Ruoyun's character, that woman is very smart and also very cunning! Elder Feng had taken pity on

your love for your son and trusted Gu Ruoyun's words easily. He's not in the wrong, it's the latter's fault for being too cunning! Elder Feng means well but Gu Ruoyun would never save Yuqing. Just last night, Yuqing had sent his men to capture Gu Ruoyun and make her his concubine. Think about it, based on their current connection, why should Gu Ruoyun save him?"

Feng Xiaoxiao no longer cared about Gu Ruoyun's intentions here. As long as she was here in Wind Valley, she could manipulate her father to kill her!

## Chapter 1217: Wind Valley (14)

---

Besides, Elder Feng was so adamant about preventing them from entering the room. That proves that they could not see Feng Yuqing now. Otherwise, if it really was as he had claimed, Feng Yuqing's life would be in grave danger.

Hence, she has to enter the room and kill two birds with one stone!

If Feng Yuqing dies, her father would never let Gu Ruoyun get away with it!

An undetectable murderous intent flashed in Feng Xiaoxiao's pretty eyes when she thought of this.

It goes without saying that Feng Xiaoxiao was very intelligent. She knows that the Valley Lord trusts Elder Feng a lot. If she had tried to frame Elder Feng, the result would work against her. Hence, she had no choice but to absolve Elder Feng of his mistakes and push all the blame onto Gu Ruoyun.

This way, her father would not believe Elder Feng and would only think that he was being manipulated.

"Elder Feng, step aside."

Indeed, after hearing Feng Xiaoxiao's words, the Valley Lord's eyes turned towards Elder Feng as he issued the order in a low, hoarse voice.

"Valley Lord?"

Elder Feng's body stiffened from where he was standing in front of the door. He stared at the Valley Lord's icy features in astonishment. "If you go in, you will end up hurting the Second Young Master."

"Elder Feng, it looks like Gu Ruoyun has really bewitched you with the waters of oblivion. That's the only reason why you would

believe her so much." Feng Xiaoxiao's gaze darkened as she spoke in an icy voice, "If you continue to try and stop us, perhaps Yuqing is already dead! He was once in danger and we had managed to save his life with great difficulty. Do you want him to die again?"

"Step aside!"

Just as Feng Xiaoxiao had spoken, the Valley Lord's cold voice rang out once again.

If it were anyone else who wanted to enter Feng Yuqing's room, Elder Feng would stop them no matter the cost.

However, this was the Valley Lord!

Elder Feng's lips filled with bitter agony. He then shook his head in exasperation and sighed but ultimately stepped aside and let them pass.

Thud!

The Valley Lord pushed the door open and walked in very quickly. Upon entering the room, the first thing he saw was Feng Yuqing whose entire body was pierced with silver needles from head to toe. At this moment, Feng Yuqing was lying silently on the bed as if he were dead.

"Qing'er!"

The Valley Lord's shocked face drained of color as he rushed towards Feng Yuqing. When he placed his hand to check for Feng Yuqing's breathing, his expression turned cold. A dense, cold air then erupted from his entire being.

"Elder Feng, I've told you before, that woman does not have any good intentions. Now, she has caused the Second Young Master's death! Hand the woman over. Otherwise, no one will be able to save you this time!" Elder Bai exclaimed, taking joy in Elder Feng's calamity.

He has never liked this old man. Just because Elder Feng had the

Valley Lord's trust, he has always been condescending. Sometimes, he would even ignore the Eldest Lady! This was great, he had trusted a woman's lies too easily and has thoroughly offended the Valley Lord.

Perhaps the Valley Lord would consider him guilty and kill him for his part in this!

The Valley Lord took a deep breath and reached his trembling hand out to remove the silver needles from Feng Yuqing's body. His heart was now clenched in a tight grip and filled with a fiery rage.

"Valley Lord."

When he saw that the Valley Lord was about to pull out the silver needles, Elder Feng's expression changed greatly. He then quickly rushed forward and grabbed the Valley Lord's outstretched hand. "Valley Lord, you must not pull out the needles. If you do so, the Young Valley Lord will die!"

"Get out of my way!"

The Valley Lord's body was shrouded in a cold air as he spat icily.



## Chapter 1218: Wind Valley (15)

---

Usually, he would never treat Elder Feng in this manner but now, he no longer cared about anything else! Besides, this old man was the cause of his son's tragic death. Why should he treat him with any courtesy?

"Valley Lord, please believe me this one time. Give me three days and I will return with a vigorous and lively Second Young Master to you! I only need three days!" Elder Feng held onto the Valley Lord's arm tightly as his eyes filled with determination.

The Valley Lord glanced at him indifferently. "Qing'er's heart has stopped, how could he still be alive? Besides, I can sense that the Resurrection Blossom in his body is missing. You should know the consequences that come with losing the Resurrection Blossom, he can't be saved!"

"Valley Lord, Gu Ruoyun has promised me that she would return in three days. She will turn the Resurrection Blossom into a Resurrection Pill and use it to save the Second Young Master! That's why she had used the silver needles to seal the Second Young Master in a state of suspended animation. If you pull the needles out, the Second Young Master will most certainly die!"

"Hehe," Elder Bai laughed icily before he spoke in a disdainful tone. "When did you become so naive? A Resurrection Pill? What on earth is that? I've never heard of it! She's asked you to give the Resurrection Blossom to her and you had actually helped her to do it? You're clearly going to kill the Second Young Master! Valley Lord, I believe that Elder Feng has deliberately gone against the rules. Please, Valley Lord, grant him a heavy punishment and avenge the Second Young Master!"

Elder Feng grew anxious. If he had known that this would happen, he should have informed the Valley Lord first. Perhaps the situation would not have gone out of hand.

However, how would Elder Feng have known that the usually desolate and overlooked North Park would draw Feng Xiaoxiao's attention?

"What do you want me to do to make you believe me?" Elder Feng was panicking as he exclaimed with sweat pouring down his face. "Valley Lord, if Gu Ruoyun really doesn't have any power, do you think that I would trust her? If you really don't believe me, I can make a wager. If Gu Ruoyun doesn't show up in three days, I will atone for my crimes with death!"

Elder Feng gritted his teeth. At this moment, he has placed all of his hopes onto Gu Ruoyun's abilities. His heart prayed endlessly that she would show up sooner so that he could be free from this situation.

"Elder Feng, this matter has nothing to do with you." A light flashed in Feng Xiaoxiao's eyes as she said, "Besides, Yuqing is dead now and Wind Valley does not wish to lose a talent like you as well. I will not let you use yourself as collateral no matter what."

What a joke, why should I possibly wait any longer?

She was feeling rather suspicious. How could a person with Gu Ruoyun's intellect possibly walk into a trap? Now, the situation was obvious. Gu Ruoyun had really come here to cure Feng Yuqing! Why should Feng Xiaoxiao grant her those three days? What if she really does manage to save Feng Yuqing? Getting someone else to do her dirty work would not be so easy then.

"Eldest Lady, I know that you're doing this for my own good but I have no other choice." Elder Feng turned towards the Valley Lord and spoke with a serious look on his face, "Valley Lord, why don't you believe me just this once? If you pull out the needle, he will die! If you trust me, there is a chance that the Second Young Master will survive! If I have been so unlucky as to place my trust in the wrong person, I will find her even if I have to go to the ends of the earth and I will bring her back to you! I will then atone for

my crimes with death!"

The Valley Lord's hand, which had been placed on the needle, paused. A strange light then flashed across his cold features. After a long pause, he retracted his hand and replied calmly, "Alright, I'll trust you this time!"

## Chapter 1219: Wind Valley (16)

---

"Father!"

Feng Xiaoxiao's expression changed and a vicious light flashed in her beautiful eyes. "We can't keep waiting like this, we must catch Gu Ruoyun immediately. I believe that she's not too far away! What if we wait and she was to escape, all that awaits Wind Valley then is a disaster. That woman's talents are too frightening and if we let her grow, Elder Feng would not be able to control her. So, father, I ask you to give the order to hunt Gu Ruoyun down and let Yuqing rest in peace!"

Thud!

Feng Xiaoxiao threw herself down and knelt on the ground as she implored calmly.

"I beg you, Valley Lord, to hunt down the culprit and avenge the Second Young Master!"

Elder Bai and the others have knelt down as well and cried out pleadingly.

"Enough!" The Valley Lord waved his hand as his stern voice echoed throughout the room. "Even if you catch her, Yuqing can't possibly be revived. Since that's the case, let's treat a medically dead horse as if it was still alive! I will believe them for now. If she doesn't show up in three days, I will make her understand the consequences of crossing Wind Valley! I will find her and kill her even if I have to go to the ends of the earth, heaven, or hell. I won't rest as long as she's alive!"

Boom!

The aura within the Valley Lord's body dispersed, breaking the table in front of him and threw everything into disorder. His eyes were filled with a cold light while his voice carried a murderous air.

Elder Feng finally heaved a sigh of relief. It was a good thing that he has managed to protect the Second Young Master. All he needs to do now was to wait for her to return...

Master, I hope you won't let me down...

Elder Feng lowered his eyelids and secretly whispered in his heart.

"Eldest Lady."

Elder Feng turned towards Feng Xiaoxiao. When he saw the extremely ugly look on her face, his heart shook.

Feng Xiaoxiao did not speak. She pursed her lips and her once gentle gaze was now frosty. Her typically delicate and dignified features no longer held their initial warm prettiness. In fact, it was replaced with cold and distant lines...

It was a good thing that everyone's attentions were now focused on Feng Yuqing. Hence, aside from Elder Feng who was next to her, no one had noticed the look on her face at all. Otherwise, they would probably reevaluate what they know of Feng Xiaoxiao's character...

...

Three days passed in a flash.

Gu Ruoyun wiped the sweat off her brow in the pill refinement chamber. Her eyes were focused upon the pill cauldron.

"I've finally managed to refine the Resurrection Blossom into a pill. Three days have passed and it's time for me to make my way over to the North Park and give Feng Yuqing this pill. I'm afraid that the silver needles will lose their effect if I delay any longer."

Perhaps the entire Wind Valley never thought that Gu Ruoyun was still in Wind Valley. She has been hiding in Elder Feng's cultivation chamber as she single-mindedly refined the Resurrection Pill.

After putting the pill away, Gu Ruoyun did not hesitate any longer and turned around to head out of the chamber...

However, once Gu Ruoyun stepped into the North Park, she sensed something peculiar which made her slow down a little. However, she ultimately continued to walk forward...

...

The three days have passed Elder Feng grew anxious in the room. Sweat rolled continuously down his face and his eyes would scan outside the door time and again. The concern in his eyes was evident.

"Elder Feng, I don't think she's coming now."

Elder Bai laughed icily as he spoke disdainfully.

Elder Feng's heart filled with panic when he sensed the increasing chill around the Valley Lord. He continued to pray endlessly in his heart, hoping that Gu Ruoyun would hurry back. After all, he had made the vow three days ago that if Gu Ruoyun does not return, his own life would be forfeit.

## Chapter 1220: Wind Valley (17)

---

Elder Feng never thought that he would place his life in the hands of a young woman one day.

This was something that he had never expected at all.

Creak!

Just as Elder Feng was beginning to panic in earnest, the tightly shut door was finally pushed open. A green-robed woman then entered the room, appearing before everyone's eyes.

Elder Feng nearly burst into tears at the sight of Gu Ruoyun. Heaven knows how much pressure he has had to endure over the past three days. He had been terrified by the Valley Lord who emitted an icy aura constantly and has had to endure Elder Bai's snarky comments as well as managing his anxious feelings for Feng Yuqing's well-being.

He has never been this emotional. At this moment, he felt that Gu Ruoyun was almost like his own mother and he nearly knelt on the ground.

"You're finally here."

He looked at Gu Ruoyun as he trembled. His eyes were filled with excitement but his voice was filled with exasperation, "If you had not come, these people would have slaughtered me."

Gu Ruoyun raised her brow and swept her gaze across the crowded room. She paused on Feng Xiaoxiao for a moment before she turned away and looked at Elder Feng again. "How is the task that I've given to you? Has anyone touched the silver needles?"

Elder Feng nodded his head vigorously. "I've successfully completed the task, there's no displacement in the silver needles from when you've left and right now. Please rest assured."

"Alright, I will begin the process of saving him now."

Gu Ruoyun slowly walked towards Feng Yuqing who was lying on the bed. She then pulled his lips apart with one finger and stuffed the pill inside.

When the pill entered Feng Yuqing's mouth, it turned into a clear stream and flowed into his lungs.

Boom!

A wave of energy erupted from Feng Yuqing and his entire body shook as if it had been shocked.

"Once I've removed the silver needles, he'll be able to wake up. The spiritual energy which had once been absorbed by the Resurrection Blossom will slowly return."

After Gu Ruoyun had finished speaking, she began to remove the silver needles from Feng Yuqing's body one by one.

Ever since Gu Ruoyun had entered the room, the Valley Lord had remained silent. However, his gaze was focused upon the woman's every move as the aura from his body grew more and more powerful. His grim features were cold and distant.

The hand which he had placed on the chair was clenched into a fist while his eyes filled with a sharp air.

If Qing'er does not awaken after she has removed the silver needles, I will make this woman join him in death!

Feng Xiaoxiao pursed her lips tightly and her expression was an ugly sight to behold. Her thoughts were vastly different from the rest as she does not want Feng Yuqing to awaken! If Feng Yuqing dies, both Gu Ruoyun and Elder Feng would die by her father's hand!

Pop!

Gu Ruoyun raised her hand and removed the final needle. She then pulled out a handkerchief and slowly put the needles away before she slowly rose to her feet as her lips curled into a calm



smile, "Alright, it's done."

Rustle!

The Valley Lord quickly rose to his feet. His eyes were fixed upon the man on the bed. At that moment, his breathing quickened and his eyes filled with anticipation.

It was clear that the Valley Lord dearly loves his only son despite the fact that the Second Young Master has a bad reputation and was a good-for-nothing...

The crowd watched as the man, who had been lying on the bed with tightly shut eyes, slowly opened them. He looked a little disoriented as if he could not understand what had happened. However, he was shocked when he saw the crowd of people around his bed. His vision then slowly became clear and bright.

## Chapter 1221: Wind Valley (18)

---

"Father, what are you doing here?"

Feng Yuqing struggled to sit up. His face was just as pale as before. "Also, there are so many people..."

"Qing'er."

The Valley Lord's heart leaped when he saw that the man had opened his eyes. He then appeared in front of the bed in a flash and clasped Feng Yuqing's hand in a tight grip as he asked in surprise, "Are you alright? I thought you were..."

"Father." Feng Yuqing smiled. "I'm sorry, I had wanted to restore my powers so I asked Great Master Gu Ruoyun to cure me. I did not inform you of that and I'm really sorry, I won't do it again."

The Valley Lord was shocked and stared at the man in front of him with disbelief.

Is this really my hedonistic and infamous son?

Why do I feel as if he has turned into another person...

"After consuming the Resurrection Pill, your past injuries have now been healed."

The Valley Lord was still in a daze when a clear and cold voice slowly rang out, "Furthermore, your powers will be fully restored but it will take some time and you need to slowly regulate it! You can now try your luck at cultivating."

When Feng Yuqing heard this, he quickly crossed his legs and tried to regulate his aura.

Once he felt the surge of spiritual energy in his body, his expression changed from astonishment to joy. His voice was filled with excitement as he said, "I can really cultivate again, Great Master Gu Ruoyun, thank you so much! If it were not for you, I would never have had this opportunity."

The Valley Lord was even more excited in comparison with Feng Yuqing. After all, his son's injuries have been his greatest heartache over the years. However, he never expected his son's powers to be restored one day.

"Great Master Gu," He rose to his feet, faced Gu Ruoyun and said, "I have treated you rudely, please don't take it to heart. You've helped Qing'er which means that you've helped all of Wind Valley. I will remember this great kindness for the rest of my life and I will never forget it."

Gu Ruoyun smiled calmly. "Fate had brought Feng Yuqing and me together which was why I had saved him. This is nothing compared to what he's given me."

If it had not been for Feng Yuqing, her spiritual beasts would never have been so fortunate as to receive the inheritance.

Her power would never have grown so quickly either.

"Lady Gu."

Feng Xiaoxiao quickly steadied her emotions before she slowly approached Gu Ruoyun. She then smiled and said, "Ever since the first time we've met, I knew that you were not a simple woman. I never thought that Yuqing's body would be restored to health thanks to your treatment. If there's anything that you need in the future, let me know. I will go through water and tread on fire without hesitation!"

"Thank you." Gu Ruoyun chuckled softly. "There's no need for that. By the way, I had run into a few assassins yesterday. It's a good thing that a powerful cultivator had happened to pass by and saved me. As long as Wind Valley doesn't try to take my life like those assassins, I am already grateful enough."

Feng Xiaoxiao's expression changed drastically when she heard the implication in Gu Ruoyun's words. However, her face quickly went back to normal with a warm and breezy smile on her pretty

and delicate features.

"Lady Gu, you are Wind Valley's benefactor, why would Wind Valley bite the hands that feed us? You won't need to worry too much about that!"

"Xiaoxiao." The Valley Lord was very satisfied with Feng Xiaoxiao's words. He then nodded and said, "As the Young Valley Lord of Wind Valley, you must take good care of Great Master Gu throughout her stay here! She must never be allowed to suffer any grief."

## Chapter 1222: Wind Valley (19)

---

"Father, don't worry, Lady Gu and I can be considered as old acquaintances. I will certainly take good care of her."

Feng Xiaoxiao's eyes were full of smiles as she turned her gaze towards Gu Ruoyun and slowly curled her lips. "Lady Gu, what do you think?"

"The Eldest Lady of Wind Valley must be very busy. I reckon that you won't have time to entertain me." Gu Ruoyun's face lifted into a calm smile. "I'm not expecting Wind Valley to entertain me, I can handle myself."

The Valley Lord nodded. "If you insist, Lady Gu, I won't force you. I will send my servants to make arrangements for you in while. If there's anything you need, Lady Gu, just send someone to inform me. I will definitely fulfill your every request."

"Alright."

This time, Gu Ruoyun did not argue and agreed instantly.

"Also, to help speed up Feng Yuqing's recovery, I'll need to prepare a few more pills. Please help me make arrangements for a pill refinement chamber after this so that no one is allowed to disturb me."

Pill refinement?

Elder Feng's eyes lit up when he heard this. "Master, will you let me aid you? Don't worry, if you're not willing to teach me to refine pills, I won't learn on the sly. Besides, based on my level of intelligence, even if I did try to learn on the sly, I might not be able to get anything anyways. However, I'd like to stand next to you and observe you during the pill refinement process. This has been a lifetime hope of mine. Master, please indulge me."

There was a pleading look on Elder Feng's face and he stared at Gu Ruoyun beseechingly once he has finished speaking.

Even if he does not know how to refine pills, it would be an honor for him to be able to stay by a pill master's side! Even to witness the birth of a pill would be enough for him!

Gu Ruoyun fell silent for a moment before she nodded her head. "Alright."

Elder Feng nearly leaped when Gu Ruoyun voiced her agreement. He then exclaimed in excitement, "Master, if any odd jobs come your way, leave them to me. I won't let you down."

Gu Ruoyun shrugged but did not say anything more. The Valley Lord burst into laughter at the sight of this. His face no longer displayed his initial grim stateliness as he said, "Lady Gu, as a token of our gratitude, my medicine storehouse is open to you. You may take whatever medicinal herbs you need. If you need to take all the medicinal herbs, that's fine too."

To him, the entire medicine storehouse was nothing compared to Feng Yuqing's full recovery. Gu Ruoyun has helped to restore Feng Yuqings powers, gifting her the entire medicine storehouse was minor compared to that!

"If there's a need, I won't be modest about it."

Gu Ruoyun smiled calmly as she replied.

She would definitely not modest about it. After all, the next pills will be refined to help restore Feng Yuqing's body...

"Father," Feng Xiaoxiao tried to speak but hesitated.

"If there's something you wish to say, speak."

The Valley Lord's face once again reverted to its stately air as he turned towards the confused-looking Feng Xiaoxiao.

"Father, I have a request." Feng Xiaoxiao spoke hesitantly. "For my birthday next month, can you help me extend an invitation to someone?"

"Oh?" The Valley Lord raised his brows and noticed an inkling

based on Feng Xiaoxiao's bashful face. He smiled calmly and said, "I wonder who you would like me to extend this invitation to?"

"It's Grand Lord Hong Lian," Feng Xiaoxiao's face blushed red. "I heard that Grand Lord Hong Lian has arrived in the First City as well. I want to ask if you could help me invite him to Wind Valley as a guest."

Grand Lord Hong Lian?

Upon overhearing this, Gu Ruoyun, who was just about to leave, suddenly paused in her footsteps as a peculiar light flashed in her eyes.

## Chapter 1223: Wind Valley (20)

---

"Are you talking about the same Grand Lord Hong Lian who's fighting against the Lin family?" The Valley Lord was astonished. "Grand Lord Hong Lian is indeed a genius. I remember that he was only a Martial King when the Lin family began to hunt him down but he's grown to this stage under those circumstances. Now, the Lin family themselves are having a headache because of him. Xiaoxiao, are you interested in Grand Lord Hong Lian?"

Feng Xiaoxiao nodded. "Father, Grand Lord Hong Lian is the man I've been searching for. The funny thing was, I didn't know it was him."

"Xiaoxiao," said the Valley Lord as he furrowed his brows. "I do admire Grand Lord Hong Lian and I won't object to having him as my son-in-law. Based on his talents, as long as he trains with Wind Valley diligently, it won't be a problem. However, Grand Lord Hong Lian already has a wife. Do you plan to become his concubine?"

"No," Feng Xiaoxiao shook her head and replied. "Grand Lord Hong Lian's wife has been missing for over twenty years, no one knows if she's dead or alive. She might not even be in the land of the living anymore. Humans live for a very long time, does he plan on staying alone forever? That's clearly impossible! I believe that I have a chance of becoming his wife. I have confidence in myself."

Even though the news of Gu Ruoyun's identity as Grand Lord Hong Lian's daughter has spread throughout the mainland, this news still has not reached the First City. Hence, Feng Xiaoxiao was blissfully unaware that she was scheming on someone's father right in front of their own daughter.

If she had known of Gu Ruoyun's identity as Grand Lord Hong Lian's daughter, she would never have brazenly discussed this matter out in the open.



The Valley Lord thought for a moment before he slowly replied, "Grand Lord Hong Lian is a little advanced in his age but I do admire him very much. He's probably the only person from the secular world who holds my admiration! If you wish to marry him, I won't have any objections. I can help you to send the invitation. However, whether the Grand Lord wishes to marry you or not, that depends on your abilities. I can't help you there."

"Yes, Father."

Feng Xiaoxiao joined her fists. When she lowered her head, her eyes were filled with smiles.

She has a good amount of confidence in her own abilities. There will be time for that later. She believes that she could slowly influence him in time.

After listening in to the conversation between the father and daughter, a queer look appeared in Gu Ruoyun's eyes but she ultimately kept quiet.

She had been worrying about how to inform her father about her whereabouts. Since Wind Valley is going to invite her father, she could just wait for him here. Once she meets her father, it will be time to find the Lin family to seek revenge...

...

"Grand Lord."

In an inn, a figure appeared out of thin air with a whoosh behind the red-robed man who was standing in front of a window. "Members of Wind Valley have recently been looking for you, Grand Lord."

"Wind Valley?"

The man gently raised his brow and slowly turned around. A cold smile then formed on his grim features. "Why is Wind Valley looking for me?"

"Apparently, it's the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley's birthday and they want to invite you, Grand Lord, to join the celebration."

Eldest Lady of Wind Valley?

Grand Lord Hong Lian fell silent. "If I remember correctly, this Eldest Lady of Wind Valley has caused trouble for Yun'er once. Since that's the case, I'm going to pay Wind Valley a visit! I want to see what they want!"

One can cross anyone but never cross this madman, Grand Lord Hong Lian!

This madman has been known to hold a grudge. Feng Xiaoxiao had once caused trouble for Gu Ruoyun in the Medicine Sect and he has not forgotten about this matter. Hence, this was why he had accepted Wind Valley's invitation this time all for the sake of a chance to avenge his daughter!

# Chapter 1224: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday (1)

---

At Wind Valley.

Gu Ruoyun was focused on refining pills in the pill refinement chamber.

Elder Feng was standing next to her as he eagerly supported her. He did not seem to think that his actions were unbecoming of an elder of Wind Valley. In fact, he was very proud! After all, not many people could accompany a pill master as a support while they refine pills.

"Bring this pill to Feng Yuqing and get him to take it" Gu Ruoyun waved her hand and lifted the cover off the pill cauldron. She then took the pills out and placed it in front of Elder Feng. "Give him one a day and this will help his body to recover. As for his powers, they should fully recover in about a month."

Elder Feng carefully clasped the pills in his hands as if he was afraid of dropping it.

"Master, I'll send this over to the Second Young Master."

There was a smile filled with adoration on his face. He then turned around and left the pill refinement chamber, closing the door behind him.

Gu Ruoyun shook her head and sighed exasperatedly. She then turned her attention back towards the pill cauldron and continued to refine her pills...

...

"Elder Bai, has there been any news from Grand Lord Hong Lian?"

Feng Xiaoxiao and Elder Bai were in an unusual room in the South Park when she turned around with gloomy eyes and asked him.

"Eldest Lady, don't worry, the Valley Lord has sent men out to spread the word. If Grand Lord Hong Lian has heard of it, he will come." Elder Bai smiled and replied soothingly. His tone then changed as he asked, "Eldest Lady, have you noticed that the Second Young Master has completely changed into a different person?"

Elder Bai was more worried about the situation in Wind Valley rather than Grand Lord Hong Lian.

After all, he has helped the Eldest Lady with a lot of matters all these years. If the Eldest Lady falls, he might not be able to survive in Wind Valley.

Feng Xiaoxiao fell silent. Ever since Gu Ruoyun has healed Feng Yuqing's body, it really did seem as if he has changed into a different person. He no longer displayed his hedonistic ways. In fact, he was now far more composed.

"I'm not going to let the power fall into Feng Yuqing's hands no matter what. Otherwise, there won't be any place for me in Wind Valley anymore!" A cold light flashed in Feng Xiaoxiao's eyes. She then declared, "Hence, on my birthday next month, I will make Feng Yuqing and his father disappear from the face of this earth! Wind Valley will only belong to me completely when they're dead!"

As for Gu Ruoyun...

Each time she thought of that name, Feng Xiaoxiao would grit her teeth in hate!

If Gu Ruoyun had not interfered, Feng Yuqing would never have recovered. Hence, this woman must be buried at Wind Valley!

"Eldest Lady, what should we do?" Elder Bai eyed Feng Xiaoxiao doubtfully. He understood that after this matter, Feng Xiaoxiao could no longer tolerate the situation.

If Feng Yuqing regains his powers, their many years of hard work would have gone to waste!

"I've already asked the Charm Sect to lend me a hand! If Father wasn't so biased towards Feng Yuqing, I would never have wanted to take his life! All that I'm doing now is because they have forced my hand!" Feng Xiaoxiao took a deep breath and a light flashed in her eyes. "Furthermore, I must meet Grand Lord Hong Lian before my birthday and make him completely mine!"

A vicious air gradually filled Elder Bai's eyes. "Eldest Lady, don't worry, I will help you to secure the position of Valley Lord of Wind Valley. When that time comes, we won't have to pretend anymore."

## Chapter 1225: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday (2)

---

Feng Xiaoxiao laughed and her smile carried an icy murderous intent.

"This time, the Sect Master of the Charm Sect will personally help me! Besides, I've promised her that if she helps me to obtain the position of Valley Lord, I will give all the spiritual beasts of the fire spiritual beast clan to her. Hence, with the Charm Sect Master's help this time, we'll certainly be able to kill Feng Yuqing and his father!"

Her voice was cold, distant and merciless. It was as if the person she intends to kill was not her father, someone who has given her life and nurtured her, but an irreconcilable enemy.

"Father, don't blame me for being vicious. You may have treated me well all these years but Feng Yuqing is the most important of all in your heart! If this continues, I'll never be able to stay as the Young Valley Lord of Wind Valley. I will never give this position to anyone."

"No." She paused before she continued to speak, "From the next month onwards, I will no longer be the Young Valley Lord but the Valley Lord!"

After her father dies, Wind Valley might drop from a second-rate power to a third-rate power. However, that was acceptable, she has the confidence in herself that one day, Wind Valley would return to its golden age. Besides, Grand Lord Hong Lian could help her as well.

...

At this moment, Gu Ruoyun appeared in the Ancient Divine Pagoda and was immediately mobbed by her spiritual beasts.

"Master, why don't you kill Feng Xiaoxiao now?" asked the Vermillion Bird furiously. Each time the Vermillion Bird thought

of Feng Xiaoxiao's hypocritical face, her eyes would spit fire from the anger.

"There's no hurry." Gu Ruoyun shook her head. "Feng Xiaoxiao is now the Young Valley Lord of Wind Valley. If I touch her, the Valley Lord would not sit back and do nothing about it. This Valley Lord is indeed very powerful so I'm going to wait until Feng Xiaoxiao shows her true colors."

The Vermillion Bird curled her lips. "How long do we have to wait? Feng Xiaoxiao is so prudent that she would never expose herself so quickly. Just a few days ago, when you had healed Feng Yuqing, she was clearly gnashing her teeth angrily at you but she still smiled at you."

"I've made it such that Feng Yuqing no longer needs to conceal himself and he can revert back to his true personality. It shouldn't be long until Feng Xiaoxiao loses her patience." Gu Ruoyun curled her lips. "Besides, Father is coming next month. I'll wait for him in Wind Valley."

"Master, is Feng Xiaoxiao really going to lose her patience? Won't she continue to hurt Feng Yuqing? I'm afraid it won't be that simple this time." Yunyao was very skeptical as she asked doubtfully.

"She won't be able to succeed if she does it alone. However, based on what I've heard, Feng Xiaoxiao has a pretty good relationship with the Charm Sect. During her birthday, the Charm Sect will definitely make an appearance. I'm guessing that when the Charm Sect members arrive, they would definitely join forces with them and attack Feng Yuqing. We must prepare ourselves before that."

Gu Ruoyun had never intended to involve herself in this matter in the first place. Unfortunately, Feng Xiaoxiao had tried to kill her after failing to recruit her! How could she continue to exercise patience this way?

"By the way..." Gu Ruoyun suddenly remembered something. She

then turned towards the fire spiritual beast. "I had received a pill formula back in the ruins. It's a pill that can help push a Semi-Saint spiritual beast into a breakthrough to the Martial Saint rank. I've now managed to successfully refine that pill. You can try it."

Everyone knows that when a cultivator reaches the rank of a high-level Martial Supreme, they would arrive at a crossroad in their cultivation path. If they could successfully gain the Martial Saint rank after that, their future would become limitless.

However, some cultivators would fail in their breakthrough and enter the rank of a Semi-Saint as a result of that failure. They would not be able to have a breakthrough for the rest of their lives.



## Chapter 1226: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday (3)

---

Of course, there were exceptions to everything!

For example, there were pills!

If one fails their breakthrough, they would enter the Semi-Saint rank and would be unable to cultivate anymore. However, with the help of a pill, a cultivator could emerge from the Semi-Saint rank! The only thing was, pills like these were very valuable. They were very hard to find even ten thousand years ago.

Gu Ruoyun never thought that she would find this pill formula in the ruins...

The fire spiritual beast's eyes were filled with excitement. He stretched out his trembling claws and accepted the pill before swallowing it. A powerful force then erupted from his body with a bang, spreading throughout the Ancient Divine Pagoda.

A Martial Saint!

I can finally break through to the Martial Saint rank!

The fire spiritual beast was so excited that he could not speak. He stared gratefully at Gu Ruoyun as his eyes filled with admiration.

"It seems that this pill really can help a Semi-Saint to breakthrough." Gu Ruoyun thought for a moment before she said, "Now, you better consolidate the powers you've obtained after your breakthrough. Your powers are a little unstable because you had used a pill to promote yourself to become a Martial Saint. You'll need a few days to consolidate it."

The fire spiritual beast quickly nodded his head, clearly still overjoyed.

Gu Ruoyun took one last look at the fire spiritual beast before she left the Ancient Divine Pagoda...

...

At Wind City.

This was the only way into Wind Valley.

A flash of red robes appeared in Wind City. There was a grim air on the man's handsome features. His straight brows were slanted towards his temples and the corner of his thin lips contained a cold firmness. He then walked into Wind City without further hesitation.

Once he stepped into the city, he was spotted by the guards who were at the gate. They immediately rushed to inform Feng Xiaoxiao.

"Is this true?"

Feng Xiaoxiao instantly rose to her feet. Her eyes were filled with excitement as her delicate, pretty, and dignified face flushed red. "Is Grand Lord Hong Lian really here?"

"Reporting to Eldest Lady, we have indeed spotted Grand Lord Hong Lian's arrival. That's why we've come back here to inform you."

The guard joined his fists as he replied with reverence.

"Alright, you can leave." Feng Xiaoxiao waved her hand as she held back the excitement in her heart. She then said, "Also, find out the name of the guest house that Grand Lord Hong Lian is staying in. I will go look for him shortly after this..."

"Yes, Eldest Lady."

After receiving his orders, the guard excused himself.

In a room at the guest house, the red-robed man was sitting with his legs crossed in meditation. A gentle breeze drifted into the room which made his red robes flutter in the wind.

Knock, knock, knock!

Someone knocked on the door and the red-robed man slowly opened his eyes. A peculiar light then flashed in his grim gaze.

"Who is it?"

His voice was low and hoarse but its impact was like a hammer, slamming fiercely into the woman's heart even though she was outside the door.

The woman's heart shivered as she stretched her hand out towards the room's door and gently pushed the door open. At that moment, the face which had haunted her thoughts day and night appeared within her sights.

It's him!

Grand Lord Hong Lian was indeed the man she had met before. However, she never thought that man would be him. Otherwise, she would have gone to the Red Lotus Territory to look for him.

"Grand Lord Hong Lian." She took a deep breath and tried to restrain her rapidly beating heart. She then walked towards the red-robed man with a comforting smile on her pretty and dignified face. "I am the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley, Feng Xiaoxiao. I've come here specially to welcome you, Grand Lord Hong Lian. I hope you don't mind, Grand Lord Hong Lian."

## Chapter 1227: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday (4)

---

Grand Lord Hong Lian laughed icily in reply. His voice was as cold and grim as ever.

"You're the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley, Feng Xiaoxiao? Is this how the dignified Eldest Lady of Wind Valley conducts herself? You would barge into a man's room in the dead of the night. If you have any unmet needs, there are many men in Wind Valley, you can enjoy anyone you wish."

Feng Xiaoxiao's face turned very pale in a split second. She never expected for Grand Lord Hong Lian to say such vicious things.

He had implied that she had visited him to fulfill her lustful urges?

"Grand Lord Hong Lian, you've misunderstood my intentions. I'm only here to welcome you, I have no other intentions."

Feng Xiaoxiao quickly reverted to her usual smile as if she had not heard the disdain in his voice.

Even Grand Lord Hong Lian himself could not help but admire her. The Eldest Lady of Wind Valley was rather profound. He had insulted her yet she still managed to smile at him as if nothing had happened.

"I am only an insignificant member of the secular world. How can I possibly deserve your personal greeting, Eldest Lady?"

Grand Lord Hong Lian's eyes grew cold as his dark eyes stared icily at Feng Xiaoxiao who was standing in front of him

That was right, to the people of First City, no matter how powerful the Grand Lord was, he was only a member of the secular world and cannot be compared with the First City's cultivators! Therefore, Grand Lord Hong Lian simply could not figure out Feng Xiaoxiao's purpose in all of this. Her reasons must not be all that simple!

Feng Xiaoxiao's eyes darkened as she bit her lips. "Grand Lord Hong Lian, are you that suspicious of me? I'm here to pay my respects to your arrival in Wind Valley, I have no other intentions. Besides, my father is very interested in you and would like to meet you."

She slowly approached Grand Lord Hong Lian as she spoke. Her pretty eyes gleamed like clear, crystalline pools of water. the Grand Lord felt as if some unknown force was deeply attracting his heart!

Slowly, the Grand Lord Hong Lian's disdainful, cold black eyes turned dazed and hazy as if he was under a spell. His eyes were misted over, making everything muddy and unclear. Like a puppet on strings, his eyes lost focus.

"Phew." Feng Xiaoxiao exhaled before her lips curled into a smile. "Thank goodness I had secretly learned the glamor spell from the Charm Sect. I can now put it to good use. I had not planned to use it at first but you keep trying to oppose me. I had no choice but to use this method to make you listen to my orders!"

Feng Xiaoxiao lifted her gaze and her pretty eyes turned towards him as they filled with adoration. She wanted to reach out and stroke the man's face but stopped herself when she was a few millimeters away.

"Grand Lord Hong Lian, very soon, I will no longer be the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley but the Valley Lord! I will then make you my other half! Of course, before that happens, I need your help. Don't blame me for using you, I'm doing this because I love you too much. Only when we destroy all obstacles can we truly become immortal companions."

As if she could already picture their beautiful future, Feng Xiaoxiao giggled softly while her eyes filled with tenderness.

"Don't worry, I won't lay a finger on you here. Once we are married, we will make love. Didn't you say that I had lustful urges? Only you can fulfill this need..."

Feng Xiaoxiao gazed upon Grand Lord Hong Lian's handsome face with a sweet and tender air before she spoke lovingly, "Ah, that's right. Grand Lord Hong Lian, I still don't know your name. Won't you tell me?"

## Chapter 1228: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday (5)

---

Grand Lord Hong Lian's eyes were dull as he replied emotionlessly like a machine, "Gu Tian."

"Gu Tian?" Feng Xiaoxiao raised her willowy brows and chuckled softly, "This name really doesn't suit you but that's alright. As long as it's your name, I'll learn to like it. I have to leave now, my birthday is only a few days away. That day shall become our wedding day as well."

Furthermore, it was the day that she would ascend to the position of Wind Valley's Valley Lord...

Feng Xiaoxiao smiled as a murderous intent flashed in her eyes.

Grand Lord Hong Lian has been bewitched by her so there was no need for her to put up a front for him. Instead, she reverted back to her vicious nature! If Wind Valley's members were to see this, they would certainly feel very shocked. In their eyes, the Eldest Lady has always conducted herself morally and was dignified and magnanimous. How could she possibly be this villain who was plotting to seize the throne?

...

At Wind Valley.

The Valley Lord, who was in the study, raised his head in shock when he heard what his daughter had just said. He stared at her face in astonishment and said, "Xiaoxiao, is this true? Grand Lord Hong Lian has agreed to marry you?"

Feng Xiaoxiao nodded as she blushed. "Father, I had gone to pay Grand Lord Hong Lian a visit to discuss our marriage. Since he has agreed, I'd like to have my birthday and my wedding on the same day. Is that alright?"

Grand Lord Hong Lian's power may not be very powerful now but his potential was limitless. As long as he could be nurtured, his

name would eventually send shockwaves throughout the First City in the future.

Of course, if Grand Lord Hong Lian was powerful enough, he would never have allowed himself to fall under a spell. The Charm Sect's glamor spell only works on those at a lower level of power...

"Xiaoxiao, are you certain that Grand Lord Hong Lian has agreed to marry you?" The Valley Lord fell silent before he asked, "I heard that Grand Lord Hong Lian is still head-over-heels in love with his missing wife. He has been searching for her whereabouts for over twenty years. How could such a devoted man fall in love with someone else so easily?"

Honestly, the Valley Lord's admiration towards Grand Lord Hong Lian had stemmed from one source. The Valley Lord greatly admires the Grand Lord's devotion to his missing wife.

As a lovesick man himself, he naturally understood the feeling.

Yet he never thought that Grand Lord Hong Lian would be so easily moved and give up on his wife whom he had been searching for many years.

"Father, don't you believe me?" Feng Xiaoxiao tugged on the Valley Lord's arm and smiled. "Grand Lord Hong Lian has promised to marry me. He may be lovesick over his wife but his wife isn't alive anymore. That's why he had promised me."

Feng Xiaoxiao lowered her head as she said those words. Tears filled her eyes as if she was feeling heartache for Grand Lord Hong Lian's sake.

"Did you say that Grand Lord Hong Lian's wife is no longer alive?" The Valley Lord was shocked and felt great sympathy at the same time. As a lovesick man himself, he had hoped that the Grand Lord's story would have a happy ending.

Feng Xiaoxiao gently pursed her lips and nodded. "Grand Lord Hong Lian had told me this himself."



"Alright." The Valley Lord thought for a moment before he said, "I want Grand Lord Hong Lian to come and see me. I'd like to discuss the matters regarding the wedding."

See him?

How can that be possible!

If Grand Lord Hong Lian really does meet my father, my lies would be exposed. Besides, my father would easily notice that Grand Lord Hong Lian has been bewitched.

Furthermore, Gu Ruoyun was in Wind Valley as well!

## Chapter 1229: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday (6)

---

As a pill master, that woman would certainly have the power to awaken 1 Grand Lord Hong Lian!

This was not the outcome that Feng Xiaoxiao desires!

"Father, Grand Lord Hong Lian had to leave soon after arriving in Wind City as he had some matters to attend to. However, he has promised me that he would return on our wedding day. I want to take care of everything myself. All he needs to do is to return as the groom!"

Feng Xiaoxiao smiled gracefully as she explained.

Even if her father manages to notice anything peculiar about Grand Lord Hong Lian on the day of the wedding, it would be too late!

Besides, that would also be the day for the Valley Lord to die! Even with Gu Ruoyun's powers, she would be powerless to defend her side. Why would she awaken Grand Lord Hong Lian from his spell then?

"Alright."

The Valley Lord has faith in Feng Xiaoxiao and he nodded. "Xiaoxiao, if what you say is true, I will help to organize this wedding for you. I just hope that nothing will disturb this wedding and the groom will show up. If the groom fails to appear, Wind Valley will be made into a laughing stock in the First City."

Fails to appear?

Feng Xiaoxiao chuckled. How could that be possible? Grand Lord Hong Lian is now under my spell so why should he disappear?

"Father, don't worry, this kind of thing would never happen." Feng Xiaoxiao smiled and her eyes filled with a gentle light. "Besides, I know Grand Lord Hong Lian's name. I want you to send

the wedding invitations out after this and ask everyone in the First City to send their blessings."

"Sigh."

The Valley Lord was unsure if he was being overly concerned but he could not shake the feeling that something was not right.

Would a lovesick man like Grand Lord Hong Lian fall for another so easily? However, if that was not the case, why was Feng Xiaoxiao so certain that Grand Lord Hong Lian would make an appearance at the wedding? Nevertheless, his daughter has always been a reliable person from a young age so he feels quite at ease.

She would never say this unless she has a complete guarantee!

"Xiaoxiao, I'll believe you this time." The Valley Lord returned to his senses and said, "However, if Grand Lord Hong Lian does not appear at the wedding, you would be stripped of your position as the Young Valley Lord. Do you object?"

Feng Xiaoxiao mentally sneered but showed no emotion on her face.

This fellow has finally shown his true colors!

She knows that her father intends to strip the position of Young Valley Lord from her and give it to his son.

Unfortunately, he would never have that chance...

"Father, I have no objections." Feng Xiaoxiao raised her head and turned to face the Valley Lord's grim features.

She definitely has no objections.

Very soon, she would not be the Young Valley Lord any longer but the Valley Lord who reigns above all!

"Since you've agreed to my terms, I'll send out your wedding invitations now. Should any consequences arise, you will carry the responsibility yourself!"

The Valley Lord's expression sank as he spoke in a dominating voice.

"I understand." Feng Xiaoxiao lowered her head as a cold light flashed in her eyes. "I'll take my leave now."

She then slowly turned around and walked out of the study...

...

Everyone in the First City was well aware of the grudge between Grand Lord Hong Lian and the Lin family. It has even brought shame upon the Lin family. However, the fairy-like Eldest Lady of Wind Valley, Feng Xiaoxiao, was now going to marry him!

This headline-worthy news was now spreading through the First City.

## Chapter 1230: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday (7)

---

"What did you just say?"

At the Lin family residence, the old man slammed his hand on his desk and rose to his feet as he bellowed angrily, "That b\\*stard Grand Lord Hong Lian is going to marry the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley, Feng Xiaoxiao! If they do get married, it would be difficult for us to attack him!"

"Master, everyone in the First City knows about this..."

The footboy carefully looked at the old man and trembled with fear as he spoke.

The old man threw his body heavily down on a chair as the expression on his elderly face changed erratically. After a long pause, he sighed, "You can leave. I need to think of a good countermeasure."

"Yes, Master."

The footboy quickly left, afraid that his Master would soon release his anger on his head.

...

At a teahouse not too far away, a woman in white was sitting in a corner of the room as she slowly sipped her tea. A cold, distant air surrounded her features which were very similar to Gu Ruoyun's, putting off anyone around her who had any intentions of hitting on her.

"Have you heard?"

A voice sounded from inside the teahouse, "They say that Grand Lord Hong Lian is going to marry the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley."

"When you say Grand Lord Hong Lian, do you mean he's the same one who is always going against the Lin family? The same Grand Lord Hong Lian who had grown into power while being

hunted by the Lin family? Tsk, tsk. That Grand Lord is indeed very talented to be able to grow into such heights in the secular world! I also heard that when he was a high-level Martial Supreme, he had managed to escape after being surrounded by Martial Saints from the Lin family. He even managed to kill two Martial Saints!"

The Lin family?

The woman in white put the teacup down when she heard that name. Her willowy brows twitched as she silently listened in on the gossip.

"However, regardless of how powerful Grand Lord Hong Lian is, he's no match for the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley. For a man from the secular world like him to be able to marry Feng Xiaoxiao, he's climbing up the social ladder. Oh, have you heard Grand Lord Hong Lian's real name? Apparently, his name is Gu Tian!"

Boom!

That news crashed into the woman in white like thunderstrike on a clear day, causing her body to tremble as she sat in the corner. The cold air surrounding her turned dense and soon filled the entire teahouse.

She then picked up her sword and rushed out the door without a backward glance at the teahouse.

The icy temperature in the teahouse dispersed once she had left.

...

The news of Grand Lord Hong Lian's marriage to Feng Xiaoxiao has reached Gu Ruoyun's ears as well. When she heard the conversation, she raised her brows and a cold smile appeared on her face. "It looks like Feng Xiaoxiao is insisting on becoming my stepmother."

Yunyao looked at Gu Ruoyun and asked, "Master, I don't think that Feng Xiaoxiao is the kind of person who would speak without thinking. Could something have happened to Grand Lord Hong

Lian?"

Gu Ruoyun fell silent for a moment before a cold glint flashed in her eyes. "Father isn't the type of person who can be easily manipulated! Besides, based on the situation, Feng Xiaoxiao isn't aware that I'm his daughter so she can't be using me to threaten him! I can't figure out what could have caused Father to agree to marry her."

"Master." Yunyao fell silent for a moment before she asked, "Would you like to me to pay Grand Lord Hong Lian a visit and ask him what happened? At least you can feel more at ease."

Gu Ruoyun's gaze darkened. "Alright, go and investigate the situation. I'm worried about him."

## Chapter 1231: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday (8)

---

Even though Gu Ruoyun believes that Grand Lord Hong Lian would not fall into a trap so easily, she could not stop worrying about him. That was why she had asked Yunyao to investigate the situation!

"Yes, Master."

...

In Wind Valley, a sea of red was draped all around the mountain range. Only the North Park has remained as peaceful and silent as before.

They were in a side room. Feng Yuqing raised the cup in his hand and took a sip before speaking with an indifferent air, "Lady Gu, you should be aware of the recent developments in Wind Valley. Feng Xiaoxiao is going to marry Grand Lord Hong Lian. What are your thoughts on the matter?"

Gu Ruoyun smiled. "Grand Lord Hong Lian won't ever marry her."

Upon hearing this, a hint of astonishment flashed in Feng Yuqing's eyes. "Lady Gu, how are you so certain that Grand Lord Hong Lian won't marry her?"

Gu Ruoyun knows because Grand Lord Hong Lian was her father, Gu Tian!

Father is deeply devoted to Mother so why should he marry another woman?

That's not possible at all.

"If Feng Xiaoxiao insists on having the wedding, it would become a complete joke." Gu Ruoyun shrugged her shoulders, smiled calmly and said, "You should make some preparations too. I have a feeling that something big will happen on her wedding day."



Feng Yuqing fell silent for a moment before he asked, "Lady Gu, when I had asked for your help to defeat Feng Xiaoxiao back then, you had refused. Why are you agreeing to it now?"

Hearing this, Gu Ruoyun chuckled, "Because Feng Xiaoxiao had sent someone to assassinate me!"

Feng Xiaoxiao had sent someone to assassinate her!

Feng Yuqing suddenly came to a realization when he heard this. Gu Ruoyun was helping him not for the sake of half of Wind Valley but because Feng Xiaoxiao had the audacity to try and kill her.

I won't attack unless I am attacked!

If anyone attacks her, she would never resign herself to it!

Only by rising to resistance would the world understand that no one should ever dare to lay a hand on her.

Feng Yuqing sighed and said, "I am glad that I had sought you out that day! I'm also glad that I'm not the one who has started a feud with you!"

This woman has always retaliated against a grudge and would repay kindness with kindness. She would leave you alone as long as you don't cross her. However, if you offend her, she would get rid of you in whatever way possible!

"You need not worry about Grand Lord Hong Lian. Just beware of the members of the Charm Sect. Knowing their relationship with Feng Xiaoxiao, they would definitely set out to help her. Right now, the only ones who can truly help Feng Xiaoxiao are the members of the Charm Sect."

The Charm Sect?

Feng Yuqing paused for a moment before he nodded and continued. "I understand, Lady Gu, that if you help me to reclaim the title of Young Valley Lord, I would honor my promise and give half of Wind Valley to you."

"I have no interest in Wind Valley." Gu Ruoyun shook her head. "However, I am very interested in the fire beast clan. If I help you to defeat Feng Xiaoxiao, give everyone in the fire beast clan to me."

Feng Yuqing nodded without hesitation. "Once we've foiled Feng Xiaoxiao's plans, I'll have a word with my father and ask him to gift the fire spiritual beasts to you."

"Good." Gu Ruoyun smiled, rose to her feet and said, "You should make some preparations for the upcoming event during these next few days. The next few days shall determine our success in causing Feng Xiaoxiao's complete defeat!"

She then turned around and walked out of the door. as her green robes fluttered gently in the breeze.

## Chapter 1232: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday (9)

---

It was the day of the wedding and the sound of the drums filled the air while everyone bustled with excitement.

Numerous cultivators from various organizations have gathered to send their best wishes hence Wind Valley was now filled with people.

At this moment outside the Wind City's gate, a woman in white slowly descended from the sky like a celestial being from a portrait. Her peerlessly beautiful face was surrounded by a cold aura while her cold eyes stared into the sky. The woman's voice was as cold as ice as she said, "Wind Valley, Feng Xiaoxiao..."

She then slowly curled the corners of her lips while an endless chill emanated from her eyes. However, when she thought of the man that she had yearned for day and night, her anger soon turned into excitement.

"Brother Tian, I don't care what Wind Valley has done to you, I want them to disappear from this world! No one is allowed to hurt my man!" The woman in white's voice became even colder, causing the surrounding temperature to plummet. After a long pause, she dispersed the cold air surrounding her and spoke in an airy voice, "Besides, Brother Tian, I trust you and I know you will never betray our love. Wind Valley must have done something to you, I won't let them get away with it!"

With that said, the woman in white's body flashed and sped towards the sky and disappeared into the air above Wind Valley.

...

"Congratulations, congratulations!"

A group of people amongst the crowd in Wind Valley joined their fists and bowed as they congratulated the Valley Lord.

The Valley Lord faced the crowd with a half-smile. Secretly, his

heart was filled with anxiety. He knows that Feng Xiaoxiao was much too stubborn. What if Grand Lord Hong Lian does not show up for the wedding? All of Wind Valley would be made into a laughing stock then.

"Xiaoxiao, is he really coming?"

In the end, he could not take it anymore. He then turned towards Feng Xiaoxiao who was dressed in bright crimson bridal robes and asked with a frown on his face.

Feng Xiaoxiao's head was covered by a crimson red cloth. Hence, it was impossible to see the look on her face. However, her voice was filled with absolute confidence as she spoke leisurely, "Father, don't worry, he'll be here. We just need to wait for now."

The Valley Lord wanted to say something but shut his mouth in the end. He then sighed gently in his heart for it was now too late for regrets.

If he had known that this would happen, he would never have agreed to Feng Xiaoxiao's illogical request.

Now, it was almost time for the auspicious moment and the groom was nowhere to be seen.

"Hahaha." Someone burst into laughter. "Didn't Wind Valley mention something about a wedding? Why do we only see the bride and not the groom?"

The Valley Lord glanced at the middle-aged man who had stepped out from behind the crowd. His gaze darkened and his grim features carried a sense of fury as he glared icily at him.

"Grand Lord Hong Lian is a man who honors his promise. He will be here! There's no need for you to trouble yourself with worry, Sky Sect's Sect Master."

The expression on the middle-aged man who had been addressed as the Sky Sect's Sect Master turned icy. He then laughed coldly and replied disdainfully, "I have the feeling that Grand Lord Hong

Lian isn't coming! Who amongst us isn't aware that the Grand Lord already has a wife whom he loves deeply. Why should he even come here?"

Underneath the red cloth, Feng Xiaoxiao clenched her fists in a tight grip. The murderous intent in her heart slowly spread out into the atmosphere.

Once Wind Valley falls into my hands, my first order of business will be to destroy the Sky Sect! I am not going to cower like my father who doesn't seem to have the courage to do anything. Even if we become irreconcilable adversaries, I would devour the entire Sky Sect!

This was the price the Sky Sect's Master would have to pay for having the audacity to laugh at me!

The Valley Lord's expression turned into an ugly shade. He then scoffed, turned around and did not spare the Sky Sect's Master a second glance.

"The Sky Sect Master's power is around the same level as Wind Valley's." Feng Yuqing lowered his eyes as he whispered into Gu Ruoyun's ear. "Besides, both our organizations have never gotten along for over hundreds of years. The animosity between my father and the Sky Sect's Master had been inherited from their predecessors. However, we were obligated to invite these organizations to Feng Xiaoxiao's wedding. I could imagine what would happen when the Sky Sect's Master and Father meet one another."

## Chapter 1233: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday (10)

---

Gu Ruoyun raised her brows and she turned to face the sky before saying, "He's here!"

Feng Yuqing was surprised. He then followed Gu Ruoyun's eyes and looked in the same direction. A grim figure in red robes was descending before his eyes like a ball of fire shooting across the sky before he landed in front of everyone.

"Hong Lian, you're finally here."

Feng Xiaoxiao removed her red veil and stared at the man's handsome face lovingly. She started to make her way towards him but when she looked into the man's cold and emotionless eyes, she shuddered and paused in her footsteps.

This can't be right!

At that moment, Feng Xiaoxiao could clearly sense that something was not right. Grand Lord Hong Lian has been bewitched by her so why were his eyes so sober and calm? He does not look spellbound at all!

What on earth is going on?

Has the spell lost its efficacy?

Feng Xiaoxiao was in shock. Before her brain could grapple the situation, the man's grim voice rang out in the courtyard, "Didn't Wind Valley send me an invitation to attend the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley's birthday celebration? Why is there a wedding here? I should congratulate you."

Boom!

His statement was like a stroke of lightning from the sky and stunned everyone in the area.

What was Grand Lord Hong Lian talking about? Was he not the groom? Yet he seems to be unaware that there was a wedding in

Wind Valley today?

The Valley Lord looked at Feng Xiaoxiao as his eyes filled with questions and skepticism, urging her for an explanation.

"Hong Lian, are you alright?" Feng Xiaoxiao smiled gracefully as she walked towards Grand Lord Hong Lian. Her pretty eyes were shining with a clear and crystalline light while her voice was like the wind, "Have you forgotten? We had discussed this, that we would get married today."

So what if he has temporarily freed himself from the spell? I can still control him!

There was a confident smile on Feng Xiaoxiao's face and her eyes flashed with an alluring light. Her voice sounded like she could lure one's soul into its shackles and cling to them.

However, Grand Lord Hong Lian's expression remained unchanged even when faced with her alluring eyes. There was a sense of disdain in his grim eyes as his lips curled into a cold and hard angle. He then whispered in a voice so low that only the two of them could hear, "Did you really think that you could bewitch me?"

He had pretended to be under her spell at that time because he wanted to watch and see what this woman plans to do!

He never thought that she would actually want to marry him!

In that case, he might as well beat her at her own game and let her do as she pleased! Otherwise, he would not have been able to deliver such a crushing blow under these circumstances and completely humiliate her! This was price Feng Xiaoxiao has to pay for causing trouble for his beloved daughter.

Grand Lord Hong Lian's words were like a stroke of lightning on a clear day and made Feng Xiaoxiao stumble several steps back. She widened her beautiful eyes in shock and stared at Grand Lord Hong Lian with an ashen face.

This fellow was faking it when he was under my glamor spell?

What on earth have I done to cause him to use this method against me?

"It looks like the dignified Eldest Lady of Wind Valley would drag some random man into marriage with her." Grand Lord Hong Lian laughed icily and his grim voice carried a hint of disdain. "I'm very sorry but I'm here to attend a birthday celebration, not to take a wife! Besides, I already have a wife. Even though she is not by my side at the moment, my heart will forever belong to her alone! I'm afraid your efforts in making me marry you are wasted!"



# Chapter 1234: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (1)

---

The Valley Lord's expression filled with anger. He then turned his gaze towards the pale-looking Feng Xiaoxiao and asked, "What's the meaning of this?"

Feng Xiaoxiao continued to stagger backward. She had never expected that her glamor spell would be useless on this man. Could it be that he was more powerful than me? Feng Xiaoxiao wondered.

That's simply impossible!

She quickly shook her head, denying that possibility.

Grand Lord Hong Lian has only managed to break through to an early-stage Martial Saint over a year ago. He could not possibly have received another promotion in power so quickly. How had he managed to resist the power of the glamor spell?

"This matter has been brought on by Feng Xiaoxiao alone, it has nothing to do with Wind Valley."

Just as the crowd was reeling over the shock of Feng Xiaoxiao's deeds, a clear, cold and calm voice suddenly chimed in. Instantly, all eyes turned their attention to an immaculate, lucid and elegant face.

"However," Gu Ruoyun paused and smiled gently before she exclaimed, "I never thought that you would come here and make such an impressive entrance. Your presence had stunned everyone as soon as you've arrived. Have you ever experienced scaring so many people to the point of speechlessness?"

The crowd was in shock, they never thought that Gu Ruoyun would speak to Grand Lord Hong Lian in this manner. They could not help but to make guesses their identities.

"Hahaha."

Grand Lord Hong Lian burst into laughter in front of the crowd. His laughter was carefree and uninhibited, very different from his usual grim and merciless air.

"You, little girl, is that any way to talk to your father? Come to me and let me see if you've gotten any thinner!"

Father?

This was like a shocking stroke of lightning, turning everyone dumbfounded.

Even Feng Yuqing, who was standing by Gu Ruoyun's side, was in a daze. He stared at Gu Ruoyun in astonishment and his eyes were filled with shock.

Lady Gu is Grand Lord Hong Lian's daughter?

No wonder she would make such a solemn vow, she's actually his biological daughter! The funny thing is, Feng Xiaoxiao had been secretly plotting in front of Gu Ruoyun to become her stepmother all along.

Feng Xiaoxiao has also been thoroughly shocked to the point of confusion by this piece of news. She bit her increasingly pale lips and shifted her eyes, now full of disbelief, from Grand Lord Hong Lian to Gu Ruoyun's face. One could imagine the shock she was feeling.

She now knows that this would be the typical ending for her unrequited love of many years.

Simply because she had once plotted to kill the love of her life's daughter!

If she had found out about Gu Ruoyun's identity a little sooner, she would never have committed such an unforgivable mistake!

"Father."

Gu Ruoyun dashed towards Grand Lord Hong Lian's arms in a

flash and held the man in a tight hug. Her face then lit up into a smile, "You're finally here..."

"How could I not come here?" Grand Lord Hong Lian chuckled as he gently patted her head. His grim eyes then softened as he said, "If I don't show up, who's going to vent your frustrations for you? Feng Xiaoxiao had the audacity to cause trouble for you back at the Medicine Sect! Now, she still has the audacity to claim that I was going to marry her! When have I ever agreed to marry her? She had only used a glamor spell and she thought that I would do as she says. What a joke, what a great joke indeed!"

In the beginning, Feng Xiaoxiao could not understand the situation. There was no grudge between her and Grand Lord Hong Lian. Even if he disliked her, there was no need for him to hurt her this way.

However, now she knows the reason why; he was Gu Ruoyun's father!

That was the explanation for this entire matter!

## Chapter 1235: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (2)

---

"Hong Lian," Feng Xiaoxiao raised her pretty brows and stared hurtfully at the red-robed man's handsome face. "Have you truly forgotten about when we had first met a few years ago? I've never forgotten about you after all these years. Why did you forget about me?"

She would never forget it. That very year, when she had received news of unearthed ruins in the secular world, that was the first time she had left the First City and journeyed out towards the ruins.

That was also the place where she had met Grand Lord Hong Lian! She had been attracted to his peerless magnificence at the time.

A man like that would be delightful no matter where he was. He would also be the center of focus.

Yet, after her unrequited love of so many years, he has forgotten all about her...

"I did not forget you."

The man's voice was cold and grim. His red robes looked stern and domineering amidst the great winds.

Just as Feng Xiaoxiao was beginning to rejoice, the red-robed man spoke again, "You had made things difficult for my precious daughter back at the Medicine Sect. I would remember you even if you have turned to ashes! As for everything else you've just said... Apologies, in this world, I have no need to remember an insignificant person or matter!"

An insignificant person or matter...

Those words were like a sharp needle piercing fiercely into Feng

Xiaoxiao's heart and caused her to stumble backward. She shook her head and smiled bitterly as she stared at Grand Lord Hong Lian.

"If you didn't have a wife, would you have married me?"

She was holding on to one last hope and wished that she could hear the answer she dearly wanted to hear.

If she could have that one answer, she would not make things difficult for Gu Ruoyun today for Grand Lord Hong Lian's sake. She would even let the father and daughter go.

"No."

However, the man's voice was just as cold and grim as ever and crushed her one last hope into nothingness.

Feng Xiaoxiao closed her eyes in agony. After a long pause, she opened them again. Her beautiful eyes no longer displayed their initial gentleness and her gaze was now filled with a cold light. She glared icily at the handsome face before her.

Hong Lian, since you insist on being heartless, don't blame me for being unjust!

I've already given you a chance yet you do not appreciate it. Since that's the case, I won't spare that daughter of yours! As for you... I will bind you to me for the rest of your life so that you will never know freedom again!

"Hehe," The Sky Sect Master laughed icily and sneered with disdain. "Valley Lord, I see that Grand Lord Hong Lian simply does not like your daughter at all. He never even knew that he would be a groom today. Could it be possible that you are forcing him to marry your daughter?"

The Valley Lord's expression was an extremely ugly sight as he glared icily at Feng Xiaoxiao. There was a disappointed look in his eyes along with a formidable domineering light.

Clearly, Feng Xiaoxiao has thoroughly let him down today!

"Feng Xiaoxiao, you had solemnly made a vow before me earlier on and swore that Grand Lord Hong Lian would most certainly marry you. If the outcome does not turn out as such, you would surrender your position as the Young Valley Lord. Now, you are no longer the Young Valley Lord of Wind Valley! This position shall be returned to Qing'er."

The Valley Lord straightened his sleeves as he declared this statement firmly.

Feng Xiaoxiao's expression has now turned even whiter than before. Suddenly, she burst into laughter. Her laugh was extremely harsh and sounded like a ghost weeping in the forest.

"Father, no matter what I do, I cannot be compared to Feng Yuqing in your heart."

She lifted her head and looked at the Valley Lord as her eyes filled with deep agony.

If her father had not removed her position as the Young Valley Lord due to her defeat, perhaps she would never have broken down like that. Yet, no matter what she does, she could not change his cold, hard heart!

## Chapter 1236: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (3)

---

Aside from Feng Yuqing, no one else could touch this man's cold heart.

"Feng Xiaoxiao, you've become too much of a disappointment." The Valley Lord then shook his head as glanced at Feng Xiaoxiao and said, "No matter what I say, you refuse to listen and you insist on your stubborn ways. Now, as a result, you've dragged Wind Valley down as a joke for everyone in the world. We've become the laughing stock of First City!"

Feng Xiaoxiao laughed bitterly before saying, "If I were Feng Yuqing instead, I doubt that you would be as furious as this. You would forgive him in the end but it's not the same for me. You will never treat me the same way you've treated him. We are both your children so why do you treat us so differently?"

"It's very simple!" The Valley Lord laughed icily. "Because Qing'er is born of my beloved and you are a product that I never wished to have! If your mother had not schemed against me, do you think that you would have come into existence?"

Obviously, Feng Xiaoxiao had angered the Valley Lord into madness until he had exposed Wind Valley's dark secret.

Didn't she ask for an answer?

Alright then, I shall tell the world why I'm not fond of Feng Xiaoxiao! Even better, now would be a good time to give Feng Yuqing a chance to officially reclaim his title!

"Xiaoxiao, even though your birth was not what I wanted, I have never treated you poorly in all these years!" The Valley Lord sighed as he spoke exasperatedly, "If you had not created such a huge issue, I would not have removed your title as the Young Valley Lord either. You only have yourself to blame for the price you've

paid today!"

You only have yourself to blame for the price you've paid today!

Those words made Feng Xiaoxiao's entire body tremble. She then burst into maniacal laughter, tearing up as she laughed. Her face was now filled with madness. "You say that you've never treated me poorly? Why didn't you marry my mother back then and instead pushed me into being raised by Feng Yuqing's mother? Why was Feng Yuqing's mother allowed to be the official wife and my mother... Did not even have the position of a lowly concubine? We are both your children yet you favored him! Even if he was hedonistic, even when he was a good-for-nothing, you still cared for him. You've never shown me your care, not even a bit!"

She held back her laughter. Her pretty eyes no longer displayed their initial calmness. Instead, her gaze was icy as she stared at the Valley Lord.

"That's right, I may have failed today but so what? From now on, the seat of Valley Lord shall be mine! You and that damned son of yours can go to hell!"

The Valley Lord was shocked and he stared at Feng Xiaoxiao's vicious gaze with disbelief. "What did you just say? Say it again!"

"Hmph!" Feng Xiaoxiao scoffed icily. "Don't think that I don't know this but ever since Feng Yuqing has managed to recover his powers, you've been wanting to hand the position of Young Valley Lord to him. I've formed an alliance with the Charm Sect so that both of you can follow each other into hell. Don't worry, in my hands, Wind Valley will grow stronger than ever! I will nurture it into a first-rate organization in the First City!"

"Feng Xiaoxiao, do you know what you're saying?!"

Elder Feng was enraged and he rose to his feet immediately. He gathered a ball of wind in his hand before he fiercely slammed it towards Feng Xiaoxiao's back. His eyes were filled with rage as he



roared, "Kneel down and apologize to the Valley Lord!"

Thud!

Just as Elder Feng's hand was about to land on Feng Xiaoxiao's back, a figure flashed in front of him and blocked his attack from landing. That figure glared icily at Elder Feng and said, "Elder Feng, you are just as brash as ever. Unfortunately, after today, Elder Feng will no longer exist in Wind Valley!"

"Elder Bai, do you want to commit treason as well?" Elder Feng gritted his teeth and asked in grief.

## Chapter 1237: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (4)

---

No matter how much he and Elder Bai do not get along, he never thought that Elder Bai would become a traitor!

Besides, in his heart, Feng Xiaoxiao would never have done something like this before.

"Hehe," Elder Bai laughed icily. "So what if I'm a traitor? Elder Feng, do you think you can stop all of us on your own?"

At that moment, the elders which Feng Xiaoxiao had pulled to her side long ago rose to their feet and stood collectively in front of Elder Bai, blocking elder Feng and protecting Feng Xiaoxiao behind them.

"You..." Elder Feng's eyes turned red with anger. His gaze pierced through the crowd and onto Feng Xiaoxiao's back, holding one last hope upon her. "Eldest Lady, I know that you are unsatisfied over the Valley Lord's biased behavior, that's why you have betrayed us. As long as you apologize to the Valley Lord, I will beg him to be merciful to you. Despite everything else, the Valley Lord is your father. He's your father who had given you life, nurtured you, and has never punished you! He might favor Feng Yuqing but he's treated you very well all these years. He has even made painstaking efforts to bring you up."

To Elder Feng, Feng Xiaoxiao was like a child who was acting out. A child like that could be forgiven.

Unfortunately, he did not understand that Feng Xiao would never turn back now, no matter what.

"Elder Feng, I've always wanted to rope you over to my side all these years but you were much too loyal to my father." Feng Xiaoxiao slowly turned around and faced Elder Feng as she curled her lips. "I can give you a chance now. Serve me, or follow my

father and his son to hell!"

Elder Feng flared with anger and he clenched his fist in a tight grip. "Feng Xiaoxiao, is this what you really want?"

"That's right, I've waited a long time for this day to come! If Father did not give the position of Young Valley Lord to Feng Yuqing, I wouldn't need to take such an extreme measure! His favoritism is to blame for all of this. Even if he dies by my hand, it would be his own fault!"

"Eldest Lady, you've misunderstood the Valley Lord's sentiments. Even though he favors the Second Young Master, he would never have stripped you of your title as the Young Valley Lord before you made that mistake." Elder Feng shook his head and sighed. "A few days ago, the Valley Lord and I had discussed that he would hand over the position of Valley Lord to you. However, you've disappointed him too much now."

"Do really expect me to believe that?" Feng Xiaoxiao laughed icily and sneered with disdain. "So what if you're speaking the truth? It has come to this stage now and I can't turn back. Furthermore, I can tell you one more thing. Feng Yuqing's heavy injuries that year? I was behind it all! Only, I never thought that you would manage to save his life. Still, what was the use in that? He had been reduced to a good-for-nothing and was of no threat to me."

Her gaze then shifted and she turned towards Gu Ruoyun. Murderous intent flickered in her eyes as she said, "Yet you had led this woman here and allowed her to restore Feng Yuqing's powers! If he had remained as a good-for-nothing, I would still have let him live for the time being. Hence, the person who has really caused harm to Feng Yuqing is her!"

Slap!

Just as she said those words, a hand was flung straight towards her and her body was sent flying out of the way with one slap. She then landed with a crash into the middle of the crowd.

The Valley Lord was clenching his fist so hard that a cracking sound could be heard. His eyes no longer displayed their initial uneasiness. Instead, they were now filled with rage.

"You were the one who had tried to kill Qing'er that year. The funny thing was, I never realized this and I even handed the title of Young Valley Lord over to you!" The awe-inspiring presence from his aura has spread throughout the area as he glared at her with eyes spitting fire, "Feng Xiaoxiao, he's your little brother. For the sake of obtaining the title of Young Valley Lord, you've tried to murder your little brother whose blood also flows in your veins!"

## Chapter 1238: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (5)

---

The Valley Lord was in grief. Even though Feng Xiaoxiao's birth was not what he had wanted, he still showered her with endless wonders and honors. He had never treated her unfairly either. He never expected that, in Feng Xiaoxiao's eyes, this was what she was thinking all along.

Until she had even crippled her own brother!

Grand Lord Hong Lian raised his brows but his grim eyes showed no sign of emotion. He never thought that he would have the chance to witness such a good show upon his arrival in Wind Valley.

"Hahaha!"

Feng Xiaoxiao burst into laughter and her laugh was like that of a deranged maniac. She no longer had the image of her once gentle and noble self.

"So what if I had killed him? I will never spare anyone who stands in my way! Father, this is the last time I will address you in this manner! From now on, you will disappear from this world, never to be seen again!"

"And you're going to achieve that?"

Elder Feng has lost all intentions of persuading her and he glared icily at the deranged Feng Xiaoxiao. "Feng Xiaoxiao, even if you've roped in so many elders to your side, it's of no use! These people alone are not enough to defeat the Valley Lord and me!"

"Oh, really?"

Just as Elder Feng had spoken, an alluring voice chimed in, causing his furious heart to tremble.

"If you include me, I wonder if you would still be able to defeat

us?"

A seductive figure then stepped out from the crowd. The woman's gorgeous face carried an entrancing and seductive smile, her footsteps were lithe and graceful, and her posture was elegant and coquettish. The crowd unconsciously turned their attention towards her.

"Are you telling me that the Charm Sect intends to intrude on Wind Valley's matters?" The Valley Lord's expression was an ugly sight to behold. His cold and distant eyes were now turned towards the peerlessly beautiful lady.

The beautiful lady puckered her lips into a gentle smile as she shifted her charming eyes towards the Valley Lord in a sideways glance. "I've promised Feng Xiaoxiao that I would ensure her ascension to the position of Valley Lord. As a prerequisite, she would present the fire spiritual beast clan as a gift to me."

"Yue Ling!"

The Valley Lord was furious and his expression has turned chilly. "My powers aren't very different from yours. Do you really think that you can defeat me? If you insist on helping Feng Xiaoxiao, don't be surprised if I act discourteously!"

"Hehe." The beautiful woman named Yue Ling pouted her lips and giggled before she sent the Valley Lord a coquettish glance. "Honestly, I am reluctant to kill you. After all, the Charm Sect and Wind Valley have enjoyed a good relationship for so many years. If you agree to warm my bed, perhaps I might spare your life."

Yue Ling's words were a great insult to the Valley Lord.

Boom!

A powerful energy exploded from within him. Wind gathered into his fist as he charged towards Yue Ling at top speed and flung his fist towards her beautiful face.

"Did you really think that I would step forward without any

guarantee after having the boldness to make an enemy of you?" Yue Ling calmly curled her lips. A then light flashed across her beautiful eyes. "It is true that I cannot kill you on my own based on your level of power. However, what if we had included him as well?"

Slam!

The Valley Lord was stunned when a heavy attack slammed fiercely onto his back. Unable to defend himself in time, his body was flung downwards and landed on the ground with a crash. A mouthful of blood spurted from his mouth and his grim features grew extremely pale.

"I'm sorry." The Sky Sect Master laughed icily. "I love watching Wind Vally under these circumstances the most so I've made an agreement with the Charm Sect, that I would help them out. Originally, Wind Valley has numerous traps so I could never have caused trouble here. However, if there's anyone to blame, blame Feng Xiaoxiao's wedding today. After all, she had given me an invitation as well. How could I have given up on such a great opportunity?"

# Chapter 1239: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (6)

---

Actually, the Valley Lord had not been too worried about the Sky Sect Master's presence.

Based on his level of power, there was no need for the Valley Lord to fear him.

However, the Valley Lord never expected that the Charm Sect and Sky Sect would join forces to defeat him!

Feng Xiaoxiao was shocked as well. She had only asked the Charm Sect's Master to help her out and she never thought that the Sky Sect would lend a hand as well. This means that she has an even better chance at winning now!

"Father!"

"Valley Lord!"

Feng Yuqing and the other Wind Valley members turned very pale. They then hurriedly rushed to the Valley Lord's side and helped him up from the ground.

The Valley Lord coughed out another mouthful of blood. He then glared at the two people standing before him with an ugly look on his face and exclaimed, "I never thought that this day would come. Yue Ling, had you planned this out in advance? Besides, I'm guessing that you're not merely vying for the fire spiritual beast clan alone but the whole of Wind Valley instead!"

Yue Ling laughed before she replied, "That's right, you're absolutely right. The fire spiritual beast clan is not an attractive enough offer for me to take action. Indeed, I intend to take over the whole of Wind Valley. The funny thing was, Feng Xiaoxiao had thought that I was sincere when I offered to help her."

Gasp!



Feng Xiaoxiao's expression instantly turned pale and she stared at Yue Ling in dismay. "Sect Master, this is not what we had discussed. You had promised to help me ascend to the position of Valley Lord, why have you gone back on your word now?"

"Idiot!" Yue Ling sneered. She refused to spare Feng Xiaoxiao's pale face a second glance as she swept her gaze through the people around before fixing her gaze upon Grand Lord Hong Lian. She then licked her lips and laughed in fascination before saying, "I hear that Grand Lord Hong Lian is extremely devoted and has been searching for his beloved wife for more than twenty years. How touching."

Grand Lord Hong Lian laughed icily. His eyes were grim and cold as he replied, "You flatter me."

"I'm not paying you a compliment. Instead..." Yue Ling covered her lips and giggled coquettishly. Her beautiful eyes were now filled with a charming light. "My greatest fault is this; I can't bear to see lovers find a way to come together in this world! All lovers must be ripped apart! Do you know how the Valley Lord had fallen into a scheme that year? I had a part to play in that. Otherwise, did you really think that a mere servant girl would have been able to seduce him?"

The Valley Lord's eyes widened and he stared at Yue Ling's charming face in shock. His cold features were filled with disbelief.

Feng Xiaoxiao's existence was possible because this woman had secretly played tricks in the past?

Furthermore, this fact had been concealed from him for so many years!

"Did a man abandon you? Is that why you're so bitter?" Gu Ruoyun raised her brows with a tight smile as she looked at Yue Ling's alluring face.

Clearly, she had hit the nail on the head, causing Yue Ling's

expression to change drastically. However, she quickly recomposed herself and gently curled her lips. "Actually, I am rather jealous of that woman who is constantly in your mind. Do you know how blessed she is to have someone who loves her so deeply that they would refuse to remarry for the rest of their life for her sake? A woman who is blessed with a partner like hers are the ones I cannot tolerate most of all. Therefore, you must be separated!"

She licked the corner of her lips and her eyes became even more charming by the minute.

"Grand Lord Hong Lian, I am rather interested when it comes to you. Why don't you come back with me to the Charm Sect, how about that?" said Yue Ling as she raised her hand to touch Grand Lord Hong Lian's handsome face.

However, before her hand could reach Grand Lord Hong Lian, a rolling aura from within the latter's body caused her hand to stiffen in place.

Her movements gradually turned sluggish.

## Chapter 1240: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (7)

---

"Get lost!" The man's voice was cold as he roared angrily with a sharp and aggressive dominance.

Yue Ling's face lifted into a smile. "Grand Lord Hong Lian, why are you so angry? If you come with me, I can guarantee that I'm so much more powerful than the woman you've been yearning for! I would even give your daughter a chance to join the Charm Sect. She could even become my direct disciple. I can offer you such great benefits! Why don't you give it a careful consideration? Your wife is only one woman, she's not worth discarding your entire future for."

A cold smile had crept up onto Gu Ruoyun's face as she listened to Yue Ling's words and a murderous intent gradually appeared in her clear and cold eyes.

Obviously, Yu Ling was already tugging at her last nerve.

"Hehe, are all of you taking advantage of my absence and coveting my man? Do you all think that I'm dead?"

Just then, a cold and indifferent voice pierced the horizon and rang in every ear.

Grand Lord Hong Lian's body turned rigid the instant he heard that voice. He slowly raised his head and his eyes turned towards the direction where that voice had sounded from. His movements became extra cautious as if he was afraid that he was hearing things.

Or, perhaps, this was all a dream...

A woman in white robes appeared out of thin air before his very eyes like a celestial being from a painting...

His gaze no longer displayed his usual cold and grim air. A wave

of excitement had slowly appeared in his dark eyes.

He had lost count of how many dreams he has had of that face. Each time he woke up, all he could see was an empty, lonely, and deserted home. Without her, all he could feel was an endless chill...

It has been more than twenty years!

Who could imagine how he had managed to endure her absence in those twenty years?

If it had not been for the thoughts of her which continued to drive and support him, he would have given up long ago!

Grand Lord Hong Lian's lips twitched a little, wishing that he could call out her name but he was afraid that this would become another dream. If he made any sound, perhaps she might disappear!

If this was really only a dream, he would willingly stay asleep for the rest of his life. As long as he could gaze upon her from afar, that was enough.

"Who are you?"

Yue Ling's eyes turned cold as she stared at the woman in the sky and asked.

"You're coveting my man and still you ask who I am?" The woman in white robes curled her lips in an indifferent manner. Her incomparably enchanting face was shrouded in a cold light. Her gaze then shifted from Yue Ling towards Grand Lord Hong Lian and Gu Ruoyun who were standing not too far away.

"Brother Tian."

She landed from the sky and walked towards the man in front of her with lithe and graceful steps.

The cold light dissipated and the woman's body seemed to be enveloped by a warm glow. All eyes were fixed upon her as the

crowd followed her every move.

"I've finally found you, brother Tian..."

The woman in white stopped once she arrived face-to-face with Grand Lord Hong Lian. She then gazed at the man before her with a deeply loving and gentle smile.

The man reached his trembling hand out, yearning to touch the woman in white's face yet afraid that she would disappear. He did not have the courage to let his large, sturdy hands touch her face. His eyes were filled with passion as he stared at her. unblinkingly. It was as if no matter how long he stared at her, it would never be enough.

"Brother Tian, we haven't seen each other for over twenty years. Don't you have anything to say to me?"

The woman in white smiled gently as she took Grand Lord Hong Lian's hand and placed it on her face.

At that moment, she felt the great tremors in the man's hand very clearly, just like a heartbeat.

"Yu'er..."

Grand Lord Hong Lian murmured gently. His voice clearly trembling as he said, "Is it really you? Yu'er..."

## Chapter 1241: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (8)

---

"Brother Tian," Dongfang Yu smiled and asked gently, "Do you not feel my warmth? It's really me. I'm not dead and I've come back to you now."

Hah!

Grand Lord Hong Lian raised his hand and forcefully pulled the woman in white into his arms. He held her tightly as he let out all of his longing for her over the past years in that one embrace.

"Yu'er, my yu'er, you're back. You've finally come back to me. How wonderful, so wonderful..."

At that moment, Grand Lord Hong Lian was so emotional that he could barely form a full sentence. To him, everything and everyone in the heaven and earth has disappeared. They were the only two people left in the world...

Gu Ruoyun rolled her shoulders. Her clear and cold gaze was filled with joy as well.

As it turned out, the woman who had slain the black dragon a while ago was indeed her mother, Dongfang Yu. Unfortunately, Dongfang Yu had left too quickly back then so she had not managed to say a thing...

"Lady Gu, isn't that the cultivator who had slain the black dragon?" Feng Yuqing clearly recognized the woman and looked at Gu Ruoyun in shock.

Is this powerful woman her mother?

"Brother Tian, is this little girl our daughter?" Dongfang Yu wiggled out of the man's embrace before her gentle gaze turned towards Gu Ruoyun.

When their eyes met, a surge of connection rushed through her

blood. It was a feeling which gave her a huge urge to pull the girl into her arms and shower her with affection.

Grand Lord Hong Lian was staring dazedly at Dongfang Yu's incomparably beautiful face. His eyes were following her every move and he did not even hear her question. He looked like a lovestruck fool who had fallen for someone for the first time. He could only see her and her alone.

"Father," Gu Ruoyun chuckled humorously, "Mother is back now. If you're going to stare at her, go to the bedroom tonight and stare at her as much as you want. Let's settle the matter at hand first before we talk."

Upon hearing Gu Ruoyun's remark, Grand Lord Hong Lian finally returned to his senses and laughed, "Little girl, you're actually making fun of your father. Ah, that's right. Yu'er, she's our daughter, Gu Ruoyun. We also have a son but unfortunately, he is not here."

Grand Lord Hong Lian sighed when he thought about Gu Shengxiao who was currently not by his side. His voice filled with exasperation.

Our family is reunited but he's the only one who isn't here!

"Brother Tian," Dongfang Yu looked around Wind Valley which was now decked in red. She then chuckled softly and said, "I heard that you're getting married to the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley, Feng Xiaoxiao. Is this true? Looks like you've fallen in love with another woman so quickly in my absence."

Dongfang Yu's voice carried a hint of rebuke yet her eyes were filled with joy as she asked her question with a forced smile.

Upon hearing this, Grand Lord Hong Lian was immediately plunged into a panic. He was so anxious that sweat began rolling down his forehead as he hurriedly clarified, "Yu'er, let me explain, this had nothing to do with me. I had never agreed to marry Feng

Xiaoxiao, she had done this all on her own. I exist only to search for you in this lifetime, other women are not fit to hold my gaze."

It was true, he really never promised Feng Xiaoxiao to marry her.

Even when he had pretended to be under the control of her glamor spell, he had never said anything like that.

Feng Xiaoxiao had assumed that Grand Lord Hong Lian had lost his ability to think so she made the decision to organize this wedding which will soon become the laughing stock of First City.

"Hehe," sniggered Dongfang Yu. "Brother Tian, why are you so tense? I wasn't blaming you, I'm only angry that someone else... Had taken advantage of my absence and coveted you. She's really digging her own grave!"

Spinny Spinny Aww! It's adorable how much Gu Tian and Dongfang Yu love each other. This is true \#relationshipgoals y'all.  
≡\(\overline{\phantom{a}}\nabla\overline{\phantom{a}})/≡



## Chapter 1242: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (9)

---

Dongfang Yu then turned her eyes towards Feng Xiaoxiao. Her gentle gaze instantly turned ten thousand times more chilly and her lips were curled into a cold smile.

Feng Xiaoxiao's expression became extremely pale as she staggered backward.

She had clearly been bothered by the affectionate exchange between the two of them and felt a great agony in her heart almost as if ants were gnawing on it. She bit her lip as she glared jealously at Dongfang Yu's incomparably beautiful features.

"Yu'er, Feng Xiaoxiao had previously tried to attack our daughter. I had come here to avenge our precious daughter."

Terrified that Dongfang Yu would have some sort of misunderstanding, Grand Lord Hong Lian quickly explained himself 1 .

"Oh?"

Dongfang Yu raised her brows. "One tiny little Wind Valley has the audacity to touch my daughter?"

Dongfang Yu's heart was filled with extreme guilt when it comes to her children, the Gu siblings.

For the past twenty over years, she and Gu Tian had been unable to stay by the siblings' side and had to leave them in the Gu family home. Knowing the members of the Gu family, they would not have had an easy time over the years. They must have suffered an infinite amount of grief!

Hence, when Dongfang Yu heard that Wind Valley had dared to push Gu Ruoyun around, she was thoroughly enraged!

"Father," Feng Yuqing helped the Valley Lord move to the side

and supported him as he sat down. He then turned his eyes towards Dongfang Yu who was dressed in white and standing in the middle of the courtyard. "This woman is very powerful!"

The Valley Lord turned towards Feng Yuqing in astonishment. "Do you know her?"

Feng Yuqing nodded, "I once watched her fight a black dragon. That black dragon couldn't even retaliate against her attack before it was slain. Lady Gu was there at the time as well but I never thought that this woman was actually Lady Gu's mother."

Feng Yuqing then sighed emotionally. At the time, he was still in shock over the woman in white's power yet he never thought that he would see her again so soon.

"Hehe!"

Feng Xiaoxiao laughed softly, "I really envy you, you've managed to get a man who would persistently wait for you for over twenty years! Even though I don't feel satisfied, I can't help but admire you! Unfortunately, no matter what, you'll never get to leave this place. The Charm Sect and the Sky Order will never let you escape. Besides, the Sect Master of the Charm Sect has already mentioned that she loves separating lovers most of all. Your man will soon walk into her bed."

Feng Xiaoxiao could not help but feel a cold aversion towards Yue Ling's wicked tastes. However, she really hoped that Yue Ling could break them up.

No one should have anything that she could not have!

"You don't have to worry too much about that because very soon, you will die here."

Whoosh!

Dongfang Yu raised the longsword in her hand and aimed it squarely at Feng Xiaoxiao. Her voice was now as cold as ice, completely different from how she was when she had spoken to

Grand Lord Hong Lian and Gu Ruoyun.

Feng Xiaoxiao's body shuddered and she slowly closed her eyes. Her pale features look as if she has chosen to face death with no regrets.

"I've done many things in this life but I've never regretted any of them! If you gave me another chance now, I would still choose to struggle for my future!"

"Eldest Lady!"

Elder Bai and the rest of the elders shook and cried out in panic. However, no one dared to run forward and block Dongfang Yu's sword.

Slash!

The icy-cold sword pierced through Feng Xiaoxiao's throat. Fresh blood then began to spill out like a fountain before she slowly closed her eyes and he crumpled stiffly onto the ground...

The Valley Lord sighed and closed his eyes, unable to bear the sight of it.

Regardless of how great Feng Xiaoxiao's sins have been, a wave of unbearable agony still washed over his heart as he witnessed the moment of her death. Nevertheless, he still had to go through with the unbearable agony and he also understood that Feng Xiaoxiao had to die!

# Chapter 1243: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (10)

---

Based on everything she had done to Feng Yuqing, the valley Lord could never let her get away with it!

Even if Dongfang Yu had not reacted, he would have killed him in the end anyway!

"It's your turn now."

Dongfang Yu slowly turned around and looked at Yue Ling who was right behind her. "You have coveted my husband and hurt my daughter!" she said icily. "These two offenses are enough reason for me to not spare you! You can choose to surrender and await your fate or a fight to your death!"

"Hehe."

Yue Ling laughed icily and her lips curled into a sarcastic smile. "Even the Valley Lord is no match for the both of us, what makes you think you can take us on? I absolutely enjoy making lovers suffer so I'm going to kill your daughter in front of you. I will also make you watch your man beg for mercy beneath me. Only then will my anger be appeased!"

Zoom!

A sharp ray of sword-light with a dense and cold air rushed towards Yue Ling, carrying.

A cold smile flashed in Yue Ling's eyes and she dodged the attack in a flash.

Boom!

The sword-light hit the wall and caused it to crumble, turning into a pile of ruins.

"Brother Tian, leave this woman to me!"

After Dongfang Yu had spoken, her white robes instantly flashed and appeared right in front of Yue Ling.

Yue Ling drew her weapon immediately and blocked Dongfang Yu's attack which was powerful enough to smash a bamboo.

Clang!

Their swords clashed against each other and a powerful wind rose from the ground. The two weapons then released a great power, instantly destroying the stone tables around them into dust which were then blown away by the wind.

Yue Ling's heart instantly clenched and she stumbled several steps back. Her face no longer displayed her initial contempt and was now replaced with a wave of seriousness.

"I never expected you to have some pretty substantial powers." Yue Ling licked the corners of her lips and her voice was seductive and moving as she said, "With such great power, you're probably not from some average organization. I wonder where you've come from?"

Dongfang Yu laughed icily and replied indifferently, "I'm not from any order or faction. I work alone!"

She was not from any order or faction?

Yue Ling's eyes flickered. As long as she was not from that organization, killing her would not be much of a problem.

"Hehe," Yue Ling laughed icily at the thought of this. "If you're not from any organization, you can only blame it on your own bad luck for running into me! Sky Order Master, let's attack together and kill this woman!"

"Yes."

The Sky Order Master nodded before he shot into the sky and landed in front of Yue Ling.

"What, is this a power play now?" Dongfang Yu curled the

corners of her lips indifferently as her eyes landed upon Yue Ling's alluring face. "However, I, Dongfang Yu, am born fearless of anyone who uses power play! No matter how many people come at me, I will kill them all!"

Whoosh!

Instantly, her fluttery white robes shot into the sky once again. A light flashed and a ray of light from her sword slashed right down.

"Father, aren't you going to give Mother a hand?" Gu Ruoyun turned towards Grand Lord Hong Lian as she raised her brow and asked.

Grand Lord Hong Lian laughed, "Yun'er, while I don't know where your mother has been all these years, seeing the scale of her powers now, I can tell that she must have been increasing her powers over the course of these past few years. Just wait and see, those two are no match for your mother."

Gu Ruoyun lifted her lips into a slight smile. She had witnessed Dongfang Yu slaying the black dragon with her own eyes.

Hence, no one knows better than her of the true scale of Dongfang Yu's powers.

However...

After hearing the amount of confidence Grand Lord Hong Lian has in Dongfang Yu, Gu Ruoyun's heart filled with relief. After so many years, these two sweethearts have finally met again.

## Chapter 1244: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (11)

---

"Is that all you can do with your combined powers?"

Dongfang Yu had taken two steps back, lifted her head and turned towards the two in front of her as she spoke in a disdainful voice.

Her attackers have very ugly looks on their faces and their eyes were filled with viciousness. They looked at each other before charging towards Dongfang Yu again.

They were almost face-to-face with Dongfang Yu when she disappeared without a trace, stopping them in their tracks.

"Opposing Heavenly Slash!"

As they were searching for Dongfang Yu's whereabouts, an ice-cold voice suddenly sounded. Their bodies shook and by the time they had turned around, a powerful force had slashed down from the sky towards the ground with a loud crash.

Yue Ling began to pant feebly. There was a particularly ugly look on her face. She knows she would have ended up badly injured from the attack if she had not avoided it in time. She might have even lost her life.

The Sky Order Master, on the other hand, was not as fortunate. Blood had begun to trickle from his forehead and his entire face was soon drenched in red. It was a rather sinister sight.

"You've managed to survive my first hit?" Dongfang Yu glanced at the sword in her hand before she sighed, "Looks like my powers aren't strong enough yet."

Her words angered Yue Ling so much that she nearly vomited a mouthful of blood.

Not only had this woman managed to escape from their

combined attack without a scratch, she has even inflicted heavy injuries on the Sky Order Master! Yet now, she was whining about her failure to kill the Sky Order Master in one blow?

Does she need to be so infuriating?

At that moment, Yue Ling no longer dared to act with carelessness. She fixed her gaze which was full of vigilance upon Dongfang Yu as she stumbled backward.

"Who was it that you had wanted to kill and who was the one who should beg for mercy from you?" Dongfang Yu's icy glare turned towards Yue Ling as she slowly descended from the sky. The longsword in her hand released an icy chill, making one tremble with fear. "My husband is not someone that you can eye covetously nor can you hurt my daughter! If you should ever try to make any plans over them, I will take this sword and kill you with it!"

There was not an ounce of warmth in the woman's chilly declaration. It made Yue Ling's heart tremble continuously.

She had been too careless in the end!

She had assumed that no one would protect Dongfang Yu because she was not from any sect or order and had completely ignored her opponent's own level of power.

"Run!"

Yue Ling waved her hand as she tried to lead the Charm Sect members out of the area.

Then again, why should Dongfang Yu give her that chance?

Slash!

Just as the Charm Sect disciples were about to make their move, a ray of light flashed in front of them. Instantly, their throats were sliced open and blood gushed out from the wound before they all crumpled to the ground without any warning.



"You..." Yue Ling's body trembled.

Those Charm Sect disciples were all geniuses yet she had killed them all in one strike!

"Are you trying to escape?" Dongfang Yu laughed icily. "Did you think that it would be that easy?"

"Dongfang Yu, what do you want?" Yue Ling stumbled backward and exclaimed icily. "Don't forget First City's rules! A large-scale massacre is not allowed in the First City. Otherwise, the Great Protectors will never leave you alone."

Dongfang Yu looked at Yue Ling and sneered, "So what? I'm avenging my husband and daughter, I'd love to see what the Protectors plan on doing to me!"

As the Sacred Lady of the Secret Order, she does not need to fear the Great Protectors!

If they do try to pressure her, she does not mind using the Secret Order to destroy those so-called Great Protectors!

## Chapter 1245: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (12)

---

"You would actually ignore the Great Protectors as well!"

Yue Ling never thought that Dongfang Yu would be this arrogant. She gritted her teeth and glared at her ferociously.

"All I know is that I will avenge my husband and daughter. As for those Great Protectors, so what if they have power?" Dongfang Yu raised her sword and spoke icily, "If they stand in the way of my killing spree, I don't mind making them my enemies!"

She then brought the longsword down and a wave of energy flew from the sword towards Yue Ling.

Yue Ling stumbled back from shock but was soon forced into a corner, unable to back away any further.

Slash!

Slash, slash, slash!

Countless waves of energy from the longsword flew towards her, shooting towards Yue Ling in a neat and uniform manner. Yue Ling quickly raised her sword to block the attacks. but there were too many strikes and she could not block them all. Instantly, countless cuts appeared all over her body.

"Dongfang Yu, you're only raining tyrannical abuse with the middle-class spiritual weapon in your hand. Where's the skill in that? If you're truly skilled, fight me in hand to hand combat!"

Yue Ling was holding a low-class spiritual weapon in her hand and she was unable to defend against Dongfang Yu's attacks. Hence, Dongfang Yu's weapon must be a class above her own! If she could have that spiritual weapon for herself, she would not need to fear this damned woman, Dongfang Yu!

Dongfang Yu laughed icily as she raised her hand and continued

to attack. She threw countless blasts from the sword towards Yue Ling, causing the wall behind her to shake. Pieces of rocks were thrown fiercely onto Yue Ling's body as well.

Ptui!

Yue Ling spat out a mouthful of blood. Her face has become increasingly pale as she crawled out from beneath the rubble. She looked poor and haggard, no longer as radiant as she once was.

"Dongfang Yu!"

She gritted her teeth hatefully. Her eyes were glaring at Dongfang Yu with daggers as if she wanted to hack her into pieces.

Dongfang Yu laughed icily. She then raised her sword once again and a ray of energy, much stronger than before, shot out from the sword. It left a long trace in the sky before swooping down to strike Yue Ling who was in the middle of the rubble.

After the strain from the previous battle, Yue Ling's body no longer has enough energy to retaliate. Her legs were trembling so much that they could give way at any moment. Hence, when faced with an even more powerful blast, forget about fighting back, she did not even have the strength to resist...

She could only watch as the white blast from the sword came closer and closer towards her before it slashed her throat!

Slam!

Her eyes were opened wide and filled with unwillingness as her body was flung heavily into the rubble. She probably never thought that she would end up losing her life as a result of that one wrong decision...

Dongfang Yu sheathed her sword before she walked towards Grand Lord Hong Lian and her daughter. The cold and distant air in her features slowly melted away and her beautiful eyes now carried a gentle light.

"Yun'er, did I scare you?" A gentle light filled Dongfang Yu's eyes before it spilled over and enveloped Gu Ruoyun. It was warm, comfortable, and very soothing. "It's alright now, I won't let anyone hurt you."

As Gu Ruoyun stared at the concern in the woman's face, she could only feel a warm current overflowing in her heart. A smile then appeared on her lucid and elegant features.

"Welcome home, Mother."

Dongfang Yu gently stroked Gu Ruoyun's hair and replied gently, "I know that in our absence, you and Shengxiao must have had to endure a lot of bitterness and receive a lot of contempt from others. Have you ever blamed me for not coming back to find you in all these years?"

Gu Ruoyun shook her head. "You must have had your reasons for staying away! I don't blame you and Big Brother has never blamed you either."

## Chapter 1246: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (13)

---

"Yun'er."

Dongfang Yu pulled Gu Ruoyun into her embrace and her eyes were filled with a gentle light.

"I'm sorry that I've left you and Shengxiao alone in the West Spirit Mainland all these years and your father and I have not been able to stay by your side. But don't worry, once our family is reunited again, I won't let anyone hurt any of you."

Grand Lord Hong Lian did not say a word. Instead, he walked towards the two of them and scooped them both into his arms.

Gu Ruoyun's heart shook and she gently lowered her eyelids.

In her past life, her father, Xia Ming, was an animal! He had even killed her mother with his bare hands! As a result, she has never enjoyed the love of both parents! Now, her father and mother were very much in love and her family was reunited. Nothing could be better than this.

The entire courtyard fell silent as they observed the soft and comforting scene. No one disturbed the family of three and they could only sigh as watched.

Elder Bai was trying to shrink his presence as much as possible, terrified that they would turn their attention to him. He swept his cowardly gaze across the crowd as he carefully stepped back, trying to take an advantage of the crowd's distraction to sneak away.

However, just as he had taken a few steps, an elderly figure stood in his way and exclaimed icily, "Elder Bai, where do you think you're going?"

That voice was like a stroke of lightning beside his ear, causing Elder Bai's body to stiffen. He laughed in embarrassment and

replied in a flattering manner, "Elder Feng, you can see that the Eldest Lady is dead now. Won't you let me off on account of our many years of friendship?"

"You want me to let you off?" Elder Feng laughed icily. "It's too late for that! You've helped the Eldest Lady to try to usurp the throne and this is a crime punishable by death! No one can save you now."

Elder Bai's body trembled and he closed his eyes in despair. His heart was filled with regret.

If I had known that this would happen, why would I have allowed myself to be influenced by the Eldest Lady and lend her my aid?

"Valley Lord," Grand Lord Hong Lian turned towards the Valley Lord of Wind Valley and said, "I'll leave the remaining evils of Wind Valley and the Sky Order members to you."

The Valley Lord nodded, "Alright, I can take care of the rest myself. However, I thank you both very much today. If it had not been for you two, I'm afraid that my position as Valley Lord would be in jeopardy!"

However, the Valley Lord could not understand why the Charm Sect had found the courage to attack Wind Valley.

Do they not fear being punished by the First City's authorities?

After all, First City's rules do not allow for such a large scale battle!

"Yu'er, Yun'er. Let's go," said Grand Lord Hong Lian as he placed his arms around Dongfang Yu and Gu Ruoyun. He then laughed, "We've finally found each other after so much difficulty. Now, we're going to enjoy the happiness of a family reunion. As for everything else, there's no need for us to do anything."

Dongfang Yu's old and distant demeanor changed as she placed her head on Grand Lord Hong Lian's chest, poised in the manner of

a little woman. Her eyes were filled with a gentle light.

Grand Lord Hong Lord then led his wife and daughter out of the place before flying off into the distance...

Nightfall.

The glow from the moonlight was clear as water.

In the guest house, Gu Ruoyun was seated on her bed in meditation. Suddenly, a purple figure appeared by her side. That person's handsome face carried a demonic smile as he said, "Little girl, our work is done. It's time for us to leave Wind Valley now."

Gu Ruoyun opened her eyes before she replied, troubled, "Xiao Ye and I had made an agreement to meet up in Wind Valley. It's been quite a while and he hasn't appeared. Do you think that something might have happened to him?"

## Chapter 1247: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (14)

---

"Don't worry, he's very powerful and most people would be no match for him."

Even though Zixie does not like Qianbei Ye, he has to admit to his abilities.

That man was very powerful. If he could regain his peak power, he would become invincible!

However...

When Zixie thought of everything that the man had done, a murderous intent flashed in his demonic eyes.

If that man was bold enough to do anything to this little girl, Zixie would kill him even if he had to place his life on the line!

Though Qianbei Ye has stayed by Gu Ruoyun's side all these years and has even saved her from danger many times, Zixie still does not fully trust him! Unfortunately, Gu Ruoyun trusts Qianbei Ye completely so Zixie had no choice but to grudgingly accept the situation...

However, each time he thought of the close intimacy between the two, Zixie's heart would fill with sour notes.

"I hope so."

Gu Ruoyun sighed and her eyes remained full of anxiety.

"Father and Mother will be heading towards the Lin family residence tomorrow yet Qianbei Ye still hasn't arrived. I'm concerned over whether I should wait for him or go with my parents?"

Zixie fell silent for a moment before he turned his purple eyes towards Gu Ruoyun. "You can make your own decision. No matter



what you do, I will support you! Little girl, I want you to understand that Qianbei Ye isn't the only one by your side, I'm also willing to keep you company for the rest of your life. Besides, we are contracted as well. With our connection via the contract, not even the laws of heaven can tear us apart."

Gu Ruoyun was stunned and she turned in astonishment towards Zixie's handsome face. "I know that you will stay with me, Zixie, but what do you mean?"

"Little girl," said Zixie as he placed his hands on Gu Ruoyun's shoulders. His demonic features have transformed from his usual impish expression to a never-before-seen seriousness. "Everything that Qianbei Ye can give you, I can give them to you as well. I can do even more than he can! Don't you know that every time I watch you get hurt, I would wish that I was the one in pain instead?"

No one knows how much his heart hurts each time he saw her body covered in scars, each time he had awakened.

Hence, whenever he entered into slumber, his heart would fill with worry, afraid that she would fall into danger during that period of time.

Yet this little girl does not seem to notice his fears and would riddle herself with scars every time. Time and time again, she would even get close to death.

"Zixie?"

Something caught Gu Ruoyun's attention, and her heart shook. She then turned around slightly and stared into the dark night outside the guest house. "You were the one who has stayed by my side the longest since I had been reborn. You were also the one who has watched over me as I've grown. You would come out to save me each time I was in danger. You are my most important friend and even without the existence of this connection via contract, your place in my heart will never change."

Friend?

Zixie slowly put his hands down. He would forever remain as a friend in this little girl's heart.

"Little girl, who is more important in your heart? Is it me or Qianbei Ye?"

Gu Ruoyun lowered her eyelids and a small smile formed in the corners of her lips. "If anything happened to you one day, I would give everything to avenge your blood feud! Even if I have to lose my life to avenge yours, I would not hesitate! However, if anyone kills Qianbei Ye, I would also avenge his blood feud. Once that is done, I'll make the proper arrangements with my family, relieve you of your contract and return you all to freedom before following him into oblivion."

## Chapter 1248: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (15)

---

Her reply was obvious. If Zixie had been murdered, she would avenge him no matter what it takes even if it means that she might lose her own life!

However, if it Qianbei Ye were to die instead, she would follow him to the end without any hesitation.

Zixie laughed bitterly and concealed the pain in his purple eyes. A teasing smile was hanging from the corners of his lips as he said, "Little girl, I was just kidding around with you, I never thought that you would actually believe me. However, as you would willingly throw your life away to settle my blood feud, I am very moved. Why don't I devote my body to you?"

His eyes lit up in an evil smile as he moved his thin lips closer to Gu Ruoyun's ear and spoke in an ambiguous tone.

Upon hearing this, Gu Ruoyun's heart let out a sigh of relief.

She already has Qianbei Ye in her heart and Zixie was a friend that she would protect with her life! Hence, she really does not want Zixie's heart to turn on her. She had even planned that once she had successfully reached her peak, she would set Zixie free so that he could find a lifelong happiness of his own.

However, Zixie clearly noticed Gu Ruoyun's sigh of relief out of the corner of his eye which made his heart throb with agony. However, he did not dare to show it on his face.

If her heart was not with him, why would he want to cause her heart any more sadness?

If his feelings caused her to feel pressured, he would rather bury these feelings deep in his heart for the rest of his life! To him, as long as this contract still exists, she would never send him away.

That was enough!

"Zixie," Gu Ruoyun lifted her head and looked at the man's handsome, teasing face before she smiled. She then fixed her gaze upon him and said, "You will always be a friend that I will protect. If you were ever in danger, I will save you regardless of the risk."

Zixie smiled. "Shouldn't I devote my body to you to repay you for saving my life?"

Gu Ruoyun's face blackened instantly.

This fellow, would his entire body be out of sorts if he doesn't tease me for one day?

"Zixie!"

Gu Ruoyun gritted her teeth and spat at the thought of this.

"Little girl, if you call out to me with such deep feelings, I will misunderstand you." Zixie's smile grew even more demonic as an unreadable light flashed in his eyes.

Gu Ruoyun took a deep breath, crossed her legs and sat down again. She closed her eyes and went into meditation, not saying another word to Zixie.

Otherwise, this fellow would anger her to death sooner or later!

...

The next day, at first light.

Gu Ruoyun had just walked out of the guest house when she bumped into Feng Yuqing who collided against her head-on. She raised her brows and said, "Congratulations, you finally had your revenge. You've even received the title of Young Valley Lord of Wind Valley. There's no need for you to put up a false front anymore."

Feng Yuqing smiled. "It's all thanks to your help, Lady Gu."

"Oh, that's right." Gu Ruoyun shook herself. "I'm leaving with

Mother and Father today but someone named Qianbei Ye will come looking for me very soon. Let him know that I've gone ahead to the Lin family residence and ask him to look for me at the Lin family home."

"Alright." Feng Yuqing gently nodded. "I've already informed my father of the things that you've requested. He has agreed to hand the fire spiritual beast clan over to you. Furthermore, this is the fire spiritual beast clan's living area so you can head over there immediately."

Feng Yuqing pulled out a map as he spoke and handed it over to Gu Ruoyun.

## Chapter 1249: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (16)

---

Gu Ruoyun looked at the red circle on the map and fell silent.

The fire spiritual beast clan's lair was situated on a mountain range near the Lin family residence. Coincidentally, she would be passing by the area so she could tame the fire spiritual beast clan first before journeying onwards towards the Lin family home.

"I'll take the map."

Gu Ruoyun then put the map away and lifted her head towards Feng Yuqing before saying, "I hope that Wind Valley won't make me their enemy from now on."

"That's for sure."

Feng Yuqing flashed a smile and his eyes were full of determination as he replied, "I can guarantee you that no matter what happens in the future, Wind Valley will never become your enemy!"

"Remember your words."

Gu Ruoyun took one last look at Feng Yuqing before she turned around and walked back into the guest house.

As Gu Ruoyun entered the guest house, she saw Dongfang Yu and her husband emerge from the room next to hers.

At this moment, Dongfang Yu's cheeks were rosy and lustrous. Her eyes were staring tenderly at the handsome man next to her and her beautiful face was engulfed in a gentle light.

"Father, Mother," Gu Ruoyun noticed the couple who had emerged from the room and began to make fun of them. "It seems that the both of you had a good time last night."

"You, little girl. You're actually teasing your mother and father."

Grand Lord Hong Lian shook his head with a face full of smiles. "The business in Wind Valley is pretty much complete now. Little girl, we'll go to the Lin family residence and have our revenge right now!"

Gu Ruoyun fell silent for a while before she replied, "You two go on ahead, I still have some matters to take care of."

"What matters do you have to take care of?"

Grand Lord Hong Lian gently raised his brow while a sense of astonishment appeared in his eyes.

"Wind Valley has promised to hand over the fire spiritual beast clan to me. I'm going to the fire spiritual beasts' lair for a while after this but I won't stay long there. Father, Mother, go and wait for me at the Lin family home. I'll rush over and join you both there once I'm done."

Gu Ruoyun replied as she gazed at the two.

"The fire spiritual beast clan?" Grand Lord Hong Lian furrowed his brow. "We shall go with you."

"There's no need." Gu Ruoyun shook her head and flashed a cunning smile at the husband and wife in front of her. "Both of you have finally been reunited after so much difficulty, I'm not going to come between you two. We'll meet again once we're at the Lin family home."

Dongfang Yu laughed and walked towards Gu Ruoyun's side. She then held her hand and replied with eyes filled with tenderness, "To both of us, the most important thing of all is to have our son and daughter by our side. Shengxiao is not here right now and you're the only one with us."

Gu Ruoyun's heart shook when she heard Gu Shengxiao's name. A bitter smile hung on her face.

I don't know where Big Brother is either or why he refuses to acknowledge us!

She does not know why but Gu Ruoyun could not shake off the feeling that Gu Shengxiao was secretly watching them but was still keeping his distance.

"Father, Mother." She regained her senses and smiled at Dongfang Yu. "Don't worry, I won't be in any danger, I'm only going over to tame the fire spiritual beasts. If the both of you come along, based on mother's terrifying powers, I bet that the timid fire spiritual beast clan would be terrified by us immediately."

Dongfang Yu sighed exasperatedly. How could she not know that her precious daughter was trying to give them some privacy for a few days?

"Yun'er, if you've made your decision, you should go ahead. I will support you no matter what you do. Your father and I won't make any move until you join us. We'll wait for you and attack the Lin family together, alright?"



## Chapter 1250: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (17)

---

"Alright."

Gu Ruoyun nodded as she took one last look at the couple in the guest house. "I'm heading off now, we shall meet again at the Lin family home."

She then made her way out of the guest house and disappeared before their eyes without another look back.

Dongfang Yu stared at Gu Ruoyun's departing figure as her gaze filled with reluctance. She then turned away and placed her head on Grand Lord Hong Lian's chest. "Brother Tian, I'm really grateful that you've made your way to the First City and brought our daughter here as well. I can't believe those Gu family b\\*stards. If they weren't already dead, I would have chopped them all up to minced meat!"

Last night, Grand Lord Hong Lian had explained Gu Ruoyun's life story to Dongfang Yu.

Dongfang Yu's entire body had trembled with rage after she found out that her precious daughter had nearly been killed by those Gu family b\\*stards. She almost ran towards hell to drag those assholes out and kill them all over away.

"I never thought that the Gu family would have turned out to be so malignant. Relatives like them are best left unacknowledged." Gu Tian then lowered his head at Dongfang Yu. "Now, as long as I have you and Yun'er by my side, it is enough. However, I don't know when Shengxiao will be joining us."

Dongfang Yu sighed gently, "Shengxiao should still be in West Spirit Mainland. Once we've had our revenge, let's go look for him, alright?"

"Agreed."

Grand Lord Hong Lian nodded and smiled gently. "By then, our family will be truly reunited!"

...

Wind City.

Gu Ruoyun was just about to head off outside the city gate when a hurried and anxious voice sounded from behind her, crying out as they panted, "Master, Master, wait for me!"

Gu Ruoyun was stunned. She turned around in astonishment and her gaze landed on Elder Feng.

"What are you doing here?"

"Huff, puff!"

Elder Feng gasped for breath. "The Young Valley Lord just returned and said that you were about to leave this place so I wanted to come here and send you off. Master, will you be coming back?"

Gu Ruoyun shook her head as she stared at Elder Feng's face which was full of anticipation. "It's likely that I won't be returning to Wind City anymore."

Hearing this, Elder Feng's eyes filled with disappointment. He then rubbed his fist and asked cautiously, "Can I come and look for you then, Master?"

Gu Ruoyun was silent for a moment before she nodded. "If you want to see me, come over anytime."

"Alright."

Elder Feng's eyes lit up. He had prepared himself for a rejection from Gu Ruoyun but he never thought that she would agree.

"This is a book on the art of pill refinement." Gu Ruoyun crooked her finger and a book appeared in her hand. She then placed the book in front of Elder Feng and said, "As long as you can understand this book, you'll be able to learn pill refinement. As for

pill formulas, that depends on your own ability to obtain them. I won't be giving any pill formulas to you."

After she spoke, she then slowly turned around and walked out of the city gate.

Elder Feng stared dazedly at the book in his hand and turned towards Gu Ruoyun. His eyes were filled with excitement and a complicated emotion.

He never thought that after his initial attitude towards her, this woman would let bygones be bygones and gift him a book about pill refinement. This kind of generosity could not be compared to anyone...

However, with this book, he could finally learn the art of pill refinement.

Elder Feng was overcome with excitement at the thought of this. He then clutched the book tightly in his grip as he stared at Gu Ruoyun as she left...

## Chapter 1251: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (18)

---

"I should be able to reach the fire spiritual beast clan once I pass through this area ."

A flash of green robes slowly descended to stand on the mountain's peak. The woman was staring at a nearby valley as the corners of her lips curled into a faint smile. "Huo'er, come out."

Whoosh!

As soon as she had spoken, a Firebird appeared in front of Gu Ruoyun. The Firebird then looked at his hometown and chirped softly in excitement.

"Come, let's make our way to the fire spiritual beast clan!"

Gu Ruoyun made her way down the mountain. Her green robes made her look as upright and steadfast as a bamboo tree. Her figure was trim and slender, casting a lonely figure on the lonesome mountain range...

"Stop!"

Gu Ruoyun had just reached the fire spiritual beast clan when two figures appeared from thin air and blocked her way.

However, when the two fire spiritual beasts noticed Huo'er, who had been following closely behind her, they were stunned and exclaimed with excitement, "Huo'er, weren't you taken by Elder Feng as a gift for another human? What are you doing here?"

"May we go inside and talk about this? Is the Clan Leader here?"

Huo'er's eyes were glowing with excitement as well. He had been away from his home for a very long time and never thought that he would be able to return one day.

"The Clan Leader is inside. This human is..." The two fire

spiritual beasts noticed Gu Ruoyun who was standing next to him and furrowed their brows. "Huo'er, why did you lead a human to us?"

The fire spiritual beast had questioned her presence with some wariness.

Fire spiritual beasts have never had any good sentiments towards humans. They believe that all humans were like those from Wind Valley whose only intention was to shut spiritual beasts away for their own uses! They would usually not be troubled by these humans but several of the fire spiritual beast clan's youngsters had been taken away by them.

Despite the fact that, not too long ago, the humans of Wind Valley had released the fire spiritual beast youngsters for some inexplicable reason, that does not mean that it had rid them of their disgust towards humans.

"She is my Master," Huo'er looked at Gu Ruoyun and replied. "We're going to speak with the Clan Leader first, I have something to say to the Clan Leader."

The two fire spiritual beasts fell silent for a moment before they nodded and said, "Alright. However, if this human has the audacity to harm the fire spiritual beast clan, we won't spare her at all!"

Huo'er heaved a sigh of relief when he heard this. As long as he could see the Clan Leader, everything would turn out alright.

An old man was seated in meditation on a woven mat in the fire spiritual beast clan's clan hall. When the clan hall's door swung open, the old man opened his eyes and turned his muddled gaze towards the beasts who had just entered the hall.

"Clan Leader, Huo'er has returned and he has brought a human along with him too."

The fire spiritual beast led Gu Ruoyun into the hall and walked towards the Clan Leader as he announced their arrival

respectfully.

"I understand," replied the Clan Leader calmly. "You may leave now, I have something to say to this human. You should stay as well, Huo'er."

"Yes, Clan Leader."

The fire spiritual beast was a little stunned. Why didn't the sight of this human shock the Clan Leader at all?

It was as if The Clan Leader had known that she would appear.

"I've sensed your presence ever since you've entered the clan." The old man smiled gently as he turned towards Gu Ruoyun and said, "However, I don't sense any murderous intent on your body. This was why I had permitted your entry! Otherwise, if you had shown any sign of bad intentions towards the fire spiritual beasts, I would never have let you walk in here alive."

## Chapter 1252: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (19)

---

Gu Ruoyun raised her brow. She could sense the old man's great power.

However, she found it very strange that such a powerful old man would fall into the hands of Wind Valley!

"I don't understand, based on the level of your power, how could the clan members end up being terrorized by Wind Valley?"

The old man laughed bitterly. "Before running into Wind Valley, I had a lot of trust in humans. However, the Eldest Lady of Wind Valley, Feng Xiaoxiao, had schemed against the fire spiritual beasts and captured a few of the weaker clan members of the younger generation. If humans had not been so cunning, the young ones of our clan would not have fallen into their clutches."

Feng Xiaoxiao?

Gu Ruoyun was astonished, she never thought that Feng Xiaoxiao would actually do such a thing.

Yet, how old could Feng Xiaoxiao possibly have been at the time? To have such deep schemes at such a young age, this Feng Xiaoxiao was far more complicated than she had imagined.

It was a good thing that she was no longer in this world. Otherwise, she would have become Gu Ruoyun's greatest rival in the future!

"Feng Xiaoxiao is dead." Gu Ruoyun slowly lifted her gaze and continued, "Hence, the fire spiritual beast clan is now free again."

The old man's eyes flickered with excitement but it died out very quickly. "I've always known that Feng Xiaoxiao would meet such an end."

Gu Ruoyun raised her brow and eyed the old man with shock,

"How are you so sure?"

"Hehe," chuckled the old man. "Previously, Feng Xiaoxiao had once paid me a visit and asked for my help to assassinate the Valley Lord of Wind Valley. I had rejected her then because I don't wish to be involved in the conflict between humans. Otherwise, the fire spiritual beast clan would surely disappear from this world."

"By rejecting Feng Xiaoxiao, weren't you afraid that she would use the young ones of the fire spiritual beast clan to threaten you?"

"No." The old man shook his head. "Feng Xiaoxiao would not dare do such a thing. If she really did put her hands on the fire spiritual beast clan, she would never be able to endure the fiery anger of the entire fire spiritual beast clan! Besides, without the young ones, what would she use as a means to threaten us? I could agree with her other condition. The only request was that I would never participate in this large-scale battle. Otherwise, we would receive punishment from the First City! Anything that involves harming the entire clan is something that I cannot do. It's a good thing that Feng Xiaoxiao is dead, the fire spiritual beast clan can finally return to peace and quiet."

"Clan Leader."

Upon hearing this, Huo'er stepped out and exclaimed, "The reason why the fire spiritual beasts have been set free again is through Gu Ruoyun's efforts. After Feng Xiaoxiao's death, she was the one who had asked Wind Valley to release the clan members. Besides, she had gone against Feng Xiaoxiao for the sake of the fire spiritual beast clan."

The old man's eyes filled with shock and he stared at Gu Ruoyun with surprise. "Little girl, you've saved the fire spiritual beast clan?"

Gu Ruoyun calmly replied, "I didn't do it to save the fire spiritual beast clan, I was only doing it to help Huo'er. He's now the little brother of one of my contracted spiritual beasts. Helping him



return his family to freedom was just something that I should do."

After hearing Gu Ruoyun's response, the old man laughed bitterly. "Humans were the ones who had hurt the fire spiritual beast clan. I never thought that it would be a human who would end up saving us as well. I really don't know if I should continue to trust humans at all in the future. However, little girl, you've helped the fire spiritual beast clan so you're our benefactor. If there's anything that you ever need in the future, let me know. I will definitely help you out."

"It doesn't stop there, Clan Leader, she's even helped me to increase my power," Huo'er boasted proudly. "I'm no longer a Semi-Saint now. As of some time ago, I've already broken through to the Martial Saint rank."

## Chapter 1253: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao (20)

---

"What?"

The Clan Leader was shocked. He then hurriedly exclaimed, "Huo'er, release your spiritual energy and show me."

Upon hearing this, Huo'er did not say anything else and released his spiritual energy.

The Clan Leader was stunned when he sensed the spiritual energy surrounding Huo'er.

"That's right, you really have broken through to the Martial Saint rank and with a very steady foundation too. This... How is this possible?"

Everyone knows that during a Martial Supreme's breakthrough to the Martial Saint rank, one small slip of failure could mean that the cultivator would never be able to become a Martial Saint for the rest of their life! Yet this little girl was actually able to detach herself from the acknowledged abilities of the world! Where on earth had she come from?

The Clan Leader took a deep breath and stared at Gu Ruoyun with a serious look on his face, "Little girl, how had you managed to do this?"

"It is true that there are many impossible things in this world. However, there is one thing that can make everything possible! That one thing is pills." Gu Ruoyun smiled. "As luck would have it, I am a pill master."

A pill master?

The Clan Master's mouth dropped open in shock. The surprise that he was feeling only grew.

This little girl is actually a respected pill master?

After all, only a select few families have access to the power of pill masters in the First City.

Besides, he dares to conclude that the pill masters from those families would never be able to refine a pill which could help a Semi-Saint breakthrough to a Martial Saint!

"Sigh." The Clan Leader returned to his senses with great difficulty and sighed gently. A bitter smile then appeared on his elderly face. "Little girl, you have helped Huo'er several times and have saved the fire spiritual beast clan. I don't know how I should thank you."

"I am only here to tell you that the fire spiritual beast clan has been restored to freedom. From now on, you won't need to be hindered by any limitations." A clear and cold light then flashed in Gu Ruoyun's eyes. "Besides, I also wanted to give Huo'er a chance to come back and visit. I'll be leaving after this to sort out my business. As for what I've done, you don't have to keep it in mind."

"Clan Leader."

Huo'er's eyes flickered and he said, "You should know that too many on this mainland have been eyeing the fire spiritual beast clan. Even though we now have our freedom again, we would still be troubled by others in the future."

It was not easy for spiritual beasts to establish a clan in the First City. Hence, this was why so many humans covet the fire spiritual beast clan.

The Clan Leader sighed, he knows that Huo'er was right.

Unless he was to prevent the younger generation of the fire spiritual beasts from ever leaving the place forever, the freedom that the fire spiritual beast clan had reclaimed with great difficulty would be lost again if any of the young ones end up getting kidnapped and used as threats.

"So..." Huo'er grinned. "Clan Leader, why don't all of you serve

my Master?"

Back in the Ancient Divine Pagoda, the Vermillion Bird was smiling so much that her eyes curved upwards into crescent moons.

She had certainly made a good choice in taking in this little brother. Even now, he was scheming in their Master's interest.

That was right!

If the fire spiritual beast clan continued to go on like this, other forces would scheme against them as well. By then, they would certainly lose their freedom again.

Hence, why not follow Gu Ruoyun instead.

At least she would never limit the spiritual beasts' freedom...

"Clan Leader, you can see how powerful my Master is at such a young age and she's a pill master too! Her future is limitless and the path is bright all the way. I have reached the rank of a Martial Saint in her hands. Can anyone else be compared with powers like hers? If the fire spiritual beasts were to follow her, we would not need to worry about the future. Besides, we would receive many benefits too."

Huo'er continued to tempt the Clan Leader with all the advantages of joining Gu Ruoyun...

## Chapter 1254: Lin Family, Revenge (1)

---

The Clan Leader fell silent. He understood the fire spiritual beast clan's current situation. It would not be a terrible idea if they were to follow this woman.

"Can you give us a guarantee that you won't force the fire spiritual beast clan to do anything? Can you assure us that you would not limit the fire spiritual beasts' freedom and that you won't force the fire spiritual beast clan to shield you from danger?"

The Clan Leader's eyes stared at Gu Ruoyun as his elderly voice slowly rang out.

Gu Ruoyun smiled serenely. "Your freedom is your own and no one has the right to put a limit on it! However, if you wish to pledge your loyalty to me, you must follow my orders unconditionally! However, I will never use you as pointless sacrifices nor will I treat you as a project. The only thing I'm asking is that when I give the order, you must trust me and listen to me! If you can do that, I can guarantee the fire spiritual beast clan's sudden ascent in the spiritual beast kingdom!"

The Clan Leader's expression slowly sank, no one could tell what he was thinking. However, he soon raised his head and stared at Gu Ruoyun's delicate and pretty features before saying, "Alright, I will give you my word."

"I still have some things to attend to so I will be leaving for now. I'll leave Huo'er here for the time being. Once I return, I will help to raise everyone in the fire spiritual beast clan's power to the Martial Saint rank!" Gu Ruoyun's voice was as calm as the wind and showed no signs of emotion despite being accepted by the fire spiritual beast clan.

Her clear and cold eyes had remained aloof the entire time, as mysterious as the night.

"Understood." The Clan Leader smiled. "The fire spiritual beast clan shall await here to welcome your return."

Gu Ruoyun gently curled her lips and turned around without another word before her figure disappeared from the ancestral hall.

"Huo'er, you can leave now."

The Clan Elder slowly shut his eyes and calmly explained, "I'd like to continue my cultivation."

"Yes, Clan Leader."

Huo'er's heart has long blossomed with happiness. If the fire spiritual beast clan really does follow his Master, he would not have to worry about the treacherous ways of other humans! Besides, one should not let one's own fertile water flow into another's field. He had to make the decision for his Master's sake.

Once Huo'er left, the old man, who had been meditating in the clan hall, slowly opened his eyes and exclaimed with reverence. "My King, she's gone now."

As soon as he had spoken, a flash of bright red robes appeared in the once quiet clan hall.

The man was dressed in red robes and had silver hair which fluttered against the gentle breeze. Nothing more beautiful could be imagined.

His gaze had traced the path of the woman's departure the entire time and his eyes were filled with warmth and longing.

"My King, I have followed your instructions and gifted the fire spiritual beast clan into her hands," the Clan Leader said reverently.

It probably never crossed Gu Ruoyun's mind that she had been able to tame the fire spiritual beast clan so smoothly because of the machinations of this man behind her.

"Mm."

Qianbei Ye's eyes continued to gaze at the receding figure outside the window and only muttered a soft reply. He did not concern himself with the Clan Leader at all. The corners of his lips were curled into a small angle yet it was so indescribably beautiful and striking, enough to beguile people out of the righteous path.

"My King, do you not wish to meet her?" The Clan Leader glanced at the man in front of him and asked cautiously, terrified that his words would anger the man.

The man gently lowered his eyelids. His voice was not as gloomy as it once was. Instead, it was filled with a sense of gentleness.

"I will find her once my wounds have healed."

He does not want to make her worry so he had hidden behind her. Once his wounds were completely healed, he would step out and pull the woman whom he dearly misses into his arms.

## Chapter 1255: Lin Family, Revenge (2)

---

"What did you say?"

Slam!

An old man's fist landed heavily on a desk in the Lin family home. He then rose to his feet and roared with an ashen look on his face, "Dongfang Yu has reappeared? She has also destroyed the Sect Master of the Charm Sect? We're finished, this time we are certainly finished. My powers are nowhere as impressive as the Charm Sect members. If Dongfang Yu comes here to exact her revenge, I have no way of fighting back."

The old man was pacing back and forth anxiously as his elderly face grew into an increasingly ugly sight. After a while, he seems to have reached a decision and gritted his teeth. "It looks like I'll have to ask for help."

At this point, only that Lord could help him now...

...

"This place is called Forest City and is also the territory where the Lin family resides."

The woman's figure paused in her footsteps outside the city gate. Gu Ruoyun then gently curled the corners of her lips and calmly remarked, "Father and Mother should be in Forest City now, I'll have to figure out a way to find them."

It goes without saying that Gu Ruoyun was quite a lucky person. As soon as she had stepped into Forest City, she stumbled upon Dongfang Yu who was having a dispute with someone.

"Don't you know who I am?"

Murong Qian placed her hands on her hips and glared angrily at Dongfang Yu who was standing in front of her. "I am a member of the Murong family," she snapped in a willful and sulky manner.



She then continued, "You had the guts to run into me yet you arrogantly refused to apologize. Are you trying to dig your own grave?"

Grand Lord Hong Lian furrowed his brows as he pulled Dongfang Yu into his arm and laughed icily. "It was you who has bruised my wife and you're trying to blame her. Is the Lady of the Murong family so unruly and willful? So savage and unreasonable?"

"Hmph!" Murong Qian scoffed icily and sneered, "Because I am a young lady from the direct line of descent of the Murong family, whatever I say is the truth! Whom amongst you would dare to disobey me? The Murong family is one of the Great Protectors. Our power and influence fill the skies. How many people in the First City would dare to disrespect me like you two?"

Murong Qian admits that she had indeed been the one who bumped into Dongfang Yu first.

However, she had just heard news of Qianbei Ye's whereabouts and was rushing over there to capture him.

In addition, she was a young lady from the direct line of descent of the Murong family and has received protection from everyone around her from a young age. How could she let anyone oppose her words now?

"Little maiden." Dongfang Yu's cold and distant eyes landed upon Murong Qian and her voice was as cold as ice, "The Murong family does indeed hold great power but there are people in this world whom you should not provoke! I'm not your mother, it's not like everyone has to tolerate you."

Murong Qian laughed icily.

Grandfather had once told me that the only people I should never provoke are the Secret Order, especially their Sacred Lady! She's one person that I should never offend.

However, I've also heard that this Sacred Lady is a woman that

the Lord Clan Elder had taken it from outside the First City. She has neither kin nor relatives, she only pays attention to her own morals and gives no thought about others. This woman before me has a husband by her side. Clearly, she is not that legendary Sacred Lady of the Secret Order.

Since that's the case, why should I be afraid of her?

"All of you, attack!"

Murong Qian's gaze darkened and a cold light flashed across her eyes. "Take these two back to the Murong family home. I want to make them understand that offending the gods is better than offending me!"

"Eldest Lady." Upon hearing this, the old man behind Murong Qian furrowed his brows in dissatisfaction. "Don't we have other more important matters to attend to? Besides, as one of the Great Protectors, if the Murong family lashes out here, gossip would be unavoidable."

This Eldest Lady was spoiled rotten until she was now undisciplined and out of control. She would never place any importance on others.

"I don't care!" Murong Qian glared furiously at Dongfang Yu and her husband. "You are going to capture these two. I want them to know that there's a price to pay in crossing me!"

## Chapter 1256: Lin Family, Revenge (3)

---

Dongfang Yu's eyes slowly darkened. She then placed her hand on the hilt of her sword as a cold light enveloped her beautiful face.

"Yu'er," Grand Lord Hong Lian said her name as he held Dongfang Yu firmly in his arms. His cold and grim gaze swept across the people in front of him and his lips curled into a cold and hard angle. "The Murong family sure loves taking advantage of others. Since that's the case, I'm not going to stand back and watch while my wife is being bullied!"

Rush!

He then took one step forward as his red robes fluttered against the wind. His figure looked incomparably cold and grim.

"You don't know what's good for you!"

Murong Qian laughed icily. Her lips were curled complacently, clearly placing no great importance on the people in front of her.

"Eldest Lady, if you don't go now, that fellow is going to get away."

The old man sighed exasperatedly and shook his head.

If there were no other witnesses around, they would certainly help the Eldest Lady to attack these two people. Unfortunately, there were far too many bystanders. If they insisted on attacking, it would generate a lot of gossip. After all, the Great Protectors were figureheads of the First City's rules.

Murong Qian's expression changed drastically when she heard that Qianbei Ye might escape from their clutches. A sense of anxiety flashed in her eyes as she said, "What are all of you waiting for? Hurry up and go after him!"

She then no longer concerned herself with Dongfang Yu or Grand Lord Hong Lian as she rushed towards the city gates.

"She's only a spoiled brat." Dongfang Yu shook her head and sighed. She held Grand Lord Hong Lian's hand in a tight grip and said, "Forget it, there's no meaning in being calculative with a child! She was only quibbling with us."

Others may fear the Murong family but Dongfang Yu certainly does not. With the Secret Order as her backer, she could completely disregard the Three Great Protectors.

"Father, Mother, what's going on here?"

A voice chimed in behind Dongfang Yu, causing her to instantly turn around. She immediately saw Gu Ruoyun who was walking towards them.

A light flickered in Gu Ruoyun's eyes as she glanced towards the direction where the Murong family had left. Unless she had heard it wrong, that woman had claimed to be a member of the Three Great Protectors.

"Yun'er, you're here!" Dongfang Yu looked at Gu Ruoyun and smiled. "Since you're here, it's time for us to make the Lin family pay! Brother Tian, let's go and have our revenge now!"

Each time she remembers how the Lin family had torn their family apart, her heart would fill with a raging flame. Her gorgeous features would then turn very cold as if it was enveloped by a layer of frost.

"Alright."

Gu Ruoyun smiled and murderous intent began to spill from her eyes. Her green robes fluttered in the wind, shrouded in a murderous air.

"Let's go!"

Grand Lord Hong Lian put an arm around Dongfang Yu and used the other to pull Gu Ruoyun into his embrace. He then burst into laughter and exclaimed, "We can finally have our revenge on the Lin family. It's just too bad that Shengxiao is not here."

Gu Ruoyun gently pursed her lips and her eyes automatically turned towards a pine tree behind her. However, she quickly turned away and curled her calm lips into a smile. "Let's storm into the Lin family home now, Mother and Father."

They then headed towards the direction of the Lin family home.

Once the group had left, a flash of black robes stepped out from behind the pine tree. The man's cold and grim eyes stared at the disappearing group as his gaze lit up with excitement.

Only the heavens know how much the sight of their reunion made him yearn to walk out and acknowledge them.

## Chapter 1257: Lin Family, Revenge (4)

---

However, he understood that he could not do that!

"Yun'er, now that they're by your side, you shouldn't run into any danger for now." The black-robed man chuckled softly as his eyes filled with a gentle light. "It's time for me to leave, I'm afraid that I won't be able to help or protect you very much for a while."

His eyes were filled with reluctance as he took one last look at the disappearing figures before he turned around and walked out of the city gates without another backward glance...

...

Two guards at the Lin family home saw the menacing trio heading towards them and immediately blocked their way forward.

"Stop! Who are you? Do you have an invitation?"

"Get out of the way!"

Bang!

An angry roar pierced through the sky and before either guard could react, their bodies were flung into the courtyard. Their eyes were wide with shock.

"Quick! Inform the Master! Someone has come to the Lin family home to stir up trouble!"

One of them quickly rose to his feet and rushed into the courtyard.

Not too long after, a group of people crowded around them as an old man walked quickly out of the courtyard.

The old man noticed Grand Lord Hong Lian in the middle of the courtyard and his facial expression turned from one of anger into shock. His complexion was now like dead ashes. "I never expected you to arrive so soon," he exclaimed with a pale face.

"Lin Yun, you old ignorant coot, you had torn my family apart and had tried to take my children's lives time and time again. Did it ever occur to you that this day would come?" Grand Lord Hong Lian laughed icily as he asked in a domineering manner.

Lin Yun closed his eyes. After a long pause, he slowly opened them again and there was a sneer in his gaze.

"What do you plan on doing to the Lin family? Don't forget the rules of First City, no matter the scale of your hatred, you cannot fully eliminate another organization! If you really plan to attack me, I'm afraid that the next thing you'll receive is the First City's punishment!"

"Hahaha!"

Grand Lord Hong Lian burst into laughter. His eyes were spitting balls of fire as he said, "Ignorant old man, I've waited for this day for a very long time. Do you really think that I'm going to spare you? That year, I, Gu Tian, had managed to survive despite the many powerful cultivators you had sent to hunt and kill me. If you were any other person from the First City, you would still suffer the same fate! The Lin family shall be destroyed today! Only then can I put my many years of rage to rest."

Lin Yun's entire body trembled with anger. Even his heart was thrown into disorder.

"Gu Tian, you are truly reckless! Do you really think that the Lin family can so easily be bullied by the likes of you? Let me tell you this, the Lin family was only following orders during the incident that year! The real person who had plotted to take Gu Shengxiao away is not someone that you should offend!"

Grand Lord Hong Lian laughed icily, "I don't care who was the one who had planned to lay their hands on my son, I won't let them get away with it either! Since the Lin family had given their aid to that party, you should know the consequences of your actions!"

Boom!

A great power spilled out from Grand Lord Hong Lian and crashed fiercely on Lin Yun.

Slam!

Lin Yun instantly stumbled backward. He then stared in shock at Grand Lord Hong Lian. "You had only broken through to the Martial Saint rank a year ago, how do you have such great power? How could you possibly have grown so rapidly?"

Lin Yun had initially thought that Dongfang Yu, who was the one who had killed the Charm Sect's Master, has a terrifying level of power. However, he never thought that in such a short period of time, Grand Lord Hong Lian's power would have increased substantially as well.

How on earth had he managed to do that?



## Chapter 1258: Lin Family, Revenge (5)

---

"How can I protect my wife and daughter if I lack power?" Grand Lord Hong Lian released Dongfang Yu from his embrace before he walked towards the stunned Lin family Master and curled his lips into a scornful smile. "Lin Yun, did you have a good time as you hunted me down throughout the years? It's fine to me if that had been the only thing you've done yet you had the audacity to attack my daughter..."

He paused for a moment before he continued to speak, "If you had not attacked my daughter, perhaps you might have been fortunate enough to receive an easier death! Since you've done such a thing, I must give you a fate worse than death!"

"Hahaha!"

Lin Yun burst into laughter. His smile was filled with arrogance and a smug air as he said, "Gu Tian, isn't your boldness in coming here simply based on your reliance on your wife's power? That's right, I acknowledge that you have great power. Unfortunately, no matter how powerful you are or how fast your powers have grown, you are no match for me. If you're truly capable, don't let your wife be the one to fight me. Let's fight one-on-one!"

"Alright."

Grand Lord Hong Lian laughed icily and responded, "Yu'er, Yun'er, I want you two to only stand back and watch. Leave this ignorant old fool to me."

"Get it done quickly, Brother Tian."

Dongfang Yu smiled gently. She has great confidence in her husband.

Gu Ruoyun did not say anything. Her dark eyes were fixed upon Grand Lord Hong Lian as a light flickered from within her pupils.

In just one year, my father's powers have greatly increased. I

wonder what kind of lucky circumstance he had managed to run into which allowed him to grow so powerful so quickly...

"Gu Tian, you are certainly bold!"

Lin Yun sneered icily.

While he admired Grand Lord Hong Lian's talent, it does not mean that he was afraid of him.

The only person that he fears was the white-robed Dongfang Yu!

"Ignorant old fool, how many people have you sent to kill my daughter? I will slice you with my blade according to that number!" Grand Lord Hong Lian gently curled his lips as his face continued to display its usual cold and grim air. His voice was filled with dominance like a great thunder which echoed through the sky.

Lin Yun burst into laughter before he soared into the air and stepped in front of Grand Lord Hong Lian. With a loud boom, he swung a swift and forceful slap towards Grand Lord Hong Lian.

"Hmph!"

Grand Lord Hong Lian scoffed and he slid his body towards the side before his right hand grabbed tightly only Lin Yun's hand. He then attacked Lin Yun with his left hand. The hit landed on Lin Yun's body and made him stumbled backward. His eyes sank.

"What? Is that all the Master of the Lin family can do?"

Grand Lord Hong Lian stared at Lin Yun who had stumbled back. The corners of his lips were curled into a smile of ridicule as he stared at his enemy's increasingly ugly expression with a sneer.

Lin Yun gritted his teeth and did not reply. He then sent another attack towards Grand Lord Hong Lian once again.

This time, Lin Yun's body moved as quickly as a surge of electricity, defying his elderly state.

Boom!

Boom, boom, boom!

The sound of continuous attacks vibrated in the sky as waves of light erupted from both men's bodies and flattened the ground around them.

Grand Lord Hong Lian's cold and grim red robes were dancing in the wild winds. There was a frosty look on the man's handsome face and his eyes were as sharp as swords which pierced through everyone's hearts. He was holding a longsword which looked like a red lotus. The longsword contrasted starkly against his face, making him look even more domineering and grim.

Lin Yun took several steps back as he panted. His pale, elderly face was staring at Grand Lord Hong Lian. He then wiped the sweat off his brow and spoke through gritted teeth. "Gu Tian, let me give you a piece of advice, you'd better surrender. Otherwise, no one will be able to save you after this! Also, if you want to kill me, I'm afraid that it won't be that easy."

## Chapter 1259: Lin Family, Revenge (6)

---

Grand Lord Hong Lian laughed coldly as he stared mockingly at Lin Yun.

"Didn't you say that you wanted to fight one-on-one with me? What? Are you going to use someone else's name as a threat now?"

Lin Yun's expression changed several times. "I'm only doing this for your own good. After all, I really admire your abilities so I don't want you to die here."

"Hahaha!" Grand Lord Hong Lian burst into laughter. "For my own good? Who was it who had sent people to kill me and did not hesitate to capture my daughter and use her to threaten me? Who was it who had sent countless Martial Saints after me for the sake of eliminating me who was a high-level Martial Supreme at the time! Now, you're saying that you don't want me to die here so I could spare your life?"

Each word that Grand Lord Hong Lian said caused Lin Yun's expression to sink even more. He then fixed a venomous glare upon the red-robed man as the murderous air from his being thickened.

I should have known. During that year, I should have disregarded the First City's rules and sent my most powerful cultivators to kill this man immediately.

However, I had been too afraid. Even though I had someone backing me up, I didn't have the courage to cross the line. As a result, he has been able to grow into this stage.

Nevertheless, no matter how much Lin Yun regrets it, it was now too late!

"What do you want?"

He gritted his teeth and spat.

"I don't ask for much," Grand Lord Hong Lian laughed icily as he replied. "I only want you to die!"

Bang!

Grand Lord Hong Lian raised the sword in his hand. Instantly, a flash of red light shot across the sky towards the nearby Lin Yun.

Stab!

The wave of energy from the sword struck Lin Yun's chest. His body instantly fell from the sky and crashed to the ground. Fresh blood then began to pour from his mouth, turning his face as white as a sheet without a trace of color to be seen.

"Master!"

The expressions of the Lin family members changed drastically as they quickly surrounded Lin Yun. However, no one dared to draw their weapons and fight.

That man's power was simply too horrifying. At this moment, no one in the Lin family was of any match for him.

"Yun'er, the members of the Lin family had once tried to kill you. How would you like to deal with them?" Grand Lord Hong Lian's eyes were staring down at the Lin family members beneath him. He then said, "Do you plan to slice them into mincemeat or to leave them without a whole corpse?"

Gu Ruoyun did not reply as she slowly walked towards the Lin family members. An indifferent light enveloped her face as she bent down and faced the old man lying on the ground.

"In the Lin family's opinion, is it true that weak and lowly people have no right to live?"

Despite being heavily injured, Lin Yun's face was still full of arrogance. He laughed scornfully and replied, "That's right. If this kid, Gu Tian, did not have this much power, perhaps he would have been killed by the Lin family long ago. The law of the jungle

has always applied in this world. Those who don't have power have no right to live in this world."

"That's right, the law of the jungle applies. If you're not powerful enough, you'd be devoured by others. However..."

She paused and the cold light in her eyes grew even more pronounced.

"It's because others want to consume you so you would retaliate! That's the meaning of the law of the jungle! If you're faced with a bunch of people who don't even have the strength to truss up a chicken, would the Lin family kill them as well?"

"That would depend on what the opposition has done!" Lin Yun raised his head to face Gu Ruoyun, gritted his teeth and said, "Anyone who dares to oppose the Lin family must die!"

Gu Ruoyun laughed but her smile did not reach her eyes.

Her dark eyes only held an endless chill and a clearly obvious murderous intent.

## Chapter 1260: Lin Family, Revenge (7)

---

"Only the people who oppose the Lin family's orders should die?" Gu Ruoyun gently raised the corner of her lips as a murderous intent came whirling from within her. "Does that mean that the Lin family members can kill a group of innocent villagers without mercy? Those villagers had never done anything wrong. All they did was to take me in yet you had let your hatred out on them and murdered all those innocent lives!"

Gu Ruoyun's heart would throb painfully and the murderous intent in her heart would deepen whenever remembers the devastation at Wind Fall Village.

"They never knew about the grudge between us. Besides, those villagers did not have one drop of power in them, they weren't even cultivators! They were only average citizens who lived in Wind Fall Village yet you completely ransacked the entire place. How is this any different from bandits?"

"Hmph!"

Lin Yun scoffed icily and replied with disdain, "They had taken you in, that was their greatest mistake. The Lin family members have never questioned whether the opposition is innocent or not. If we want to kill them, we'll kill them. People who don't have any shred of power are simply a waste of space on this earth! Killing them can be considered as the Lin family members' big contribution to the mainland! As a cultivator of this mainland, all of you should be thanking me for this service!"

That was right, in the eyes of the Lin family, ants with no powers have no right to exist.

If they had killed them, it would be within their right to kill them. Who would dare say any other word against them?

Gu Ruoyun took a deep breath to quell the boiling rage in her

heart. Her eyes have grown increasingly cold and icy as she stared emotionlessly at the disdainful Lin Yun.

"Father, I'd like to handle him personally to avenge those innocent villagers!"

Lin Yun may not be the true culprit behind the Wind Fall villagers' massacre.

However, if he had not educated his subordinates in this manner, those people would never have slaughtered so many innocent villagers so cruelly!

This was a debt that she had placed on Lin Yun's head.

"Alright."

Grand Lord Hong Lian nodded. "If that's what you want to do, go ahead! I will take on the consequences!"

"Vermillion Bird."

Gu Ruoyun curled her lips indifferently as she softly summoned the Divine Beast.

Whoosh!

Instantly, a fiery-red figure appeared in front of her.

The figure was an extremely adorable little lolita. Her round face looked innocent and naive while her pink, cherubic cheeks made one feel a forceful urge to pinch it. She blinked her large, fiery-red eyes and looked as beautiful as a porcelain doll.

However...

Lin Yun does not have the boldness to treat her as an average child because an average child would never appear out of thin air.

There could only be one possibility!

This fellow was a spiritual beast!

Gasp!



Lin Yun drew in a sharp breath at the thought of this.

A spiritual beast who could appear so secretively out of thin air, how powerful could she be?

Initially, he had thought that Dongfang Yu was the one who holds the most terrifying amount of power in their group. He never thought that Grand Lord Hong Lian's growth would have been so rapid but what shocked him even more now was that their daughter would have such a powerful spiritual beast as well.

He finally understood why, despite sending so many assassins, not a single one of them had returned!

"Hehe, I guess it's true, you won't find a puppy in a tiger's den!" Lin Yun laughed scornfully. "Grand Lord Hong Lian and his wife are already so powerful, one shouldn't underestimate their offspring either. I have really underestimated your entire family! However, did you really think that you could kill me just like that?"

Gu Ruoyun did not seem to hear Lin Yun's words. "Vermillion Bird, I want his body to be placed inside your flaming cage, unable to live or die!" she ordered indifferently. "He won't be able to break free and will suffer from the flames forever. Can you do that?"

## Chapter 1261: Lin Family, Revenge (8)

---

The Vermillion Bird blinked and nodded. "I will use my Vermillion Bird flames to deal with him, Master. My Vermillion Bird flames won't burn the flesh but will scorch the soul. However, as long as his flesh is not destroyed, the soul will never disappear! He will have to suffer the agony of being burned by the flames for all eternity and he would be turned into a good-for-nothing by the flames."

"Alright, place him in the flaming cage so he can reflect over everything he's done in this life!"

Not only had the Lin family tore my parents apart, they had also schemed against Gu Shengxiao as well.

Even those innocent villagers had died by the Lin family's hand.

With this kind of hatred, how could she let Lin Yun die so easily? She would make him endure this torture for all eternity, never able to die!

"You..."

Lin Yun's eyes widened in shock. He then propped himself up from the ground and crawled to his feet before he stumbled several steps back. His elderly face has become increasingly pale as his heart pleaded for those people to hurry up and rush over. Otherwise, he believes that this group would never spare him!

"Stop!"

Just as a powerful flame rose from the Vermillion Bird's body, someone shouted angrily from the sky and the atmosphere was suddenly filled with dense murderous intent.

"Vermillion Bird, ignore him, continue!"

Gu Ruoyun faintly curled her lips into a smile. She knew that Lin Yun had been sprouting nonsense to stall for time. Nevertheless, so

what if those people have arrived? She certainly would not spare him so easily.

"Lord Wen Luo, save me!"

Lin Yun's eyes flashed with a pleasant surprise at the sight of his reinforcements. He quickly cried out for help.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, an endless flame kindled from the ground and spread out around him, forming a circle.

The raging flame that rose from the circle began to burn his body.

"Aaargh!"

Lin Yun screamed shrilly and he rolled on the ground in agony, wishing that he could run out of the circle of flames. However, his attempts were futile as there seems to be a force field around the circle. No matter how much he rammed his body at it, he could not leave the flames at all.

"My Vermillion Bird's flames will never disappear, not even in a thousand years!" The Vermillion Bird blinked as she grinned at the shrieking Lin Yun. "You should just enjoy yourself here! As long as your flesh is intact, your soul will remain! Hence, you can endure a thousand years' worth of torture within my flames."

Lin Yun was filled with regret. He deeply regrets that he never broke the First City's rules and killed these people in the first place.

Otherwise, he would never have had to endure this kind of torture...

Flames that could burn for a thousand years. Why not let him die a little faster? However, he understood that Gu Ruoyun would never let him die so easily...

Each time Lin Yun remembers how he would have to suffer this torture for a thousand years, his shrieks would grow even shriller.

He howled and shrieked so wildly that it horrified everyone in sight.

Now, he had placed his last and only hope on the person who had just arrived.

As long as he could kill Gu Ruoyun, perhaps Lin Yun could leave this place...

"I ordered you to stop, didn't you hear me?"

Wen Luo, who was dressed in white robes, stood in the sky. His voice was filled with rage as he spoke coldly.

Gu Ruoyun raised her head towards the man in the air before raising the corners of her lips indifferently. "The Wen family of First City? I never thought that the members of the Wen family would love to meddle in the affairs of others so much! You would even want to stick your nose into my personal grudge against the Lin family."

"The rules of First City state that no one is allowed to destroy other organizations without permission. Are you saying that you want to ignore the rules?"

Wen Luo raised his head arrogantly as he swept his disdainful gaze across the crowd below him.

## Chapter 1262: Lin Family, Revenge (9)

---

Gu Ruoyun does not know why but when she looked at Wen Luo, she could not help but be reminded of the Immortal Realm at West Spirit Mainland.

The Wen family and the Immortal Realm share many similarities.

Gu Ruoyun burst into laughter but her smile was as clear and cold as always. Her eyes held a faint glimmer of mockery as she said, "Why had cultivators from the First City attacked others on their own? I didn't see the Wen family butting in at that time! Yet, you would come along and act as the law when I want to kill someone?"

"How would you know that the Wen family <sup>1</sup> had turned a blind eye to this?" A fierce light flashed in Wen Luo's eyes as he stared at Gu Ruoyun ferociously. "If the Lin family had not been under the First City's authority, do you think that you'd still be alive? You would have visited the Yellow Spings <sup>2</sup> long ago! Instead, you have no sense of gratefulness and have caused a disturbance in front of us, the First City's Great Protectors! As long as I'm here today, don't even think about laying a finger on the Lin family!"

"Oh, really?"

Gu Ruoyun raised her brows as she waved the sword in her hand. The Lin family members in front of her did not even have time to react before they all fell into their own pool of blood <sup>3</sup>.

"You..." Wen Luo's eyes were spitting fire as he glared angrily at Gu Ruoyun. "You're really going to disregard the First City's authority?"

This damned girl, she had the audacity to kill others in front of me! She clearly doesn't place any importance on me!

Gu Ruoyun laughed icily. "This strike is for the ones who had

been harmed by the Lin family! You claimed that the First City had used its rules to limit the Lin family but how do you explain the massacre at Wind Fall village? I had promised those innocent villagers that I would come to the Lin family and avenge them someday. It's useless for anyone to stop me!"

"Hahaha!"

Wen Luo laughed in spite of his rage. His features have turned ashen. "What a smug and egotistical little girl. I can't let you be when you ignore the First City's rules like that. Prepare for death!"

Boom!

A murderous air rose from within his body before he gathered an infinite amount of power in the palm of his hand and slammed it towards Gu Ruoyun. There was a murderous look in his eyes and that made the temperature in their surroundings plummet to an eerie chill.

Slam!

A flash of white robes had appeared in front of Gu Ruoyun.

The white-robed woman raised her hand and blocked Wen Luo's attack. Both parties then stumbled back with a crash.

"You're trying to kill my daughter in front of me. All of you from the First City, when have you become ignorant of my presence?" Dongfang Yu lifted her icy cold eyes and her body was enveloped by a cold and aloof aura. "Besides, my daughter is right! It's much too obvious that the First City is protecting the Lin family! They've murdered so many innocent people and they should die. How is it a sin for us to destroy the Lin family?"

Grand Lord Hong Lian did not say a word but his cold and grim eyes filled with a murderous aura as well. He pulled Gu Ruoyun into his arms as his gaze became as swift and sharp as a keen longsword slashing imaginary foes.

"Yun'er, stay here, leave the rest to us."

He then slowly released the woman in his arms and walked to Dongfang Yu's side. His cold and grim eyes stared at the white-robed man before him and his voice carried a murderous intent as he said, "Back then, where was the First City's authority when the Lin family had tried to kill me? Where were you when the Lin family tried to kill my daughter? When the Lin family had attacked and killed those villagers, I didn't see anyone standing up to protect those innocent people. Now, you want to insist that we abide by the First City's rules?"

Wen Luo gently narrowed his eyes. He knew that the Lin family had been unreasonable in this matter. Back then, if he had not shielded the Lin family, the First City would have severely punished the Lin family.

## Chapter 1263: Lin Family, Revenge (10)

---

So what if the Wen family was in the wrong?

As long as he does not admit this mistake, they would never be in the wrong at all.

"Grand Lord Hong Lian, I understand your rage. As long as you spare the members of the Lin family, I will give you all another chance." Wen Luo held back his rage as he replied arrogantly, "No one can oppose the rules of First City."

"To hell with the rules!"

Grand Lord Hong Lian was so angry that he exploded with curses. There was a furious look on his handsome face as he said, "I, Gu Tian, have never been one to play by the rules. All I know is that everytime someone crosses me, I will return the favor to them ten times more! Besides, this ignorant fool, Lin Yun, had sent someone to kill my daughter! If I don't kill him, how can I satisfy the rage in my heart?"

"Since you insist on being stubborn, I have no choice but to bring you down!"

Wen Luo laughed icily. He had been worried that he would not get an opportunity to kill these people but Grand Lord Hong Lian has provided him with a rather good opening.

Those who break the First City's rules must die!

Boom!

An angry flame exploded from Wen Luo's being and expanded throughout the entire courtyard, spreading destruction. Even the firm Lin family home's walls were reduced to rubble by his aura. A ferocious then wind erupted and Wen Luo, who was standing amidst the strong winds, gained a powerful and commanding presence.



"Brother Tian."

Dongfang Yu patted Grand Lord Hong Lian's shoulder before she stepped out and said, "Wen Luo is rather powerful, you won't be a match for him alone. What do you think if we join forces and defeat him together?"

"Let's do that. Hahaha!"

Grand Lord Hong Lian burst into wild laughter. His laugh was filled with an air of dominance and sharpness, haughty and uninhibited, "Yu'er, we haven't fought side-by-side in a very long time. This time, let's combine our forces and defeat our enemies just like we did twenty years ago, alright?"

Dongfang Yu giggled gently. In her opinion, as long as she was by Gu Tian's side, everything was a kind of happiness.

"Zixie."

Gu Ruoyun lowered her eyelids and calmly asked, "If they are unable to defeat the enemy, I want you to come out and help them."

"Okay."

Zixie's gentle yet gruff demonic voice answered from within her soul.

Gu Ruoyun finally put her anxiety down when she heard this. Her gaze then turned towards the two parties on the battlefield...

"Grand Lord Hong Lian, honestly, I really admire your abilities. Unfortunately, we can only ever be enemies!" Wen Luo burst into laughter as the space between his brows filled with arrogance. "Since we're fated to be enemies, I have no choice but to kill you before you've completed your growth!"

Boom!

After he spoke, he immediately raised his fist and dashed it heavily towards Grand Lord Hong Lian's face...

...

On a mountain range not too far away, the members of the Murong family heard the commotion from that battle. They could not help but stop and turn their eyes towards Forest City behind them. One of them wrinkled their brows as they asked, "What's going on over there? Why do I sense the Wen family's aura?"

"Why should we care so much?" Murong Qian was full of anxiety. "We're looking for that bastard, Qianbei Ye, now! Everything else has nothing to do with us!"

"Eldest Lady, the Governor had once given the order that we, the Three Great Protectors, must stand together no matter what. Only then will we be able to manage the First City effectively! If the Wen family is in danger and we did nothing to save them, it would be difficult to endure the Governor's punishment!"

He paused at this point of the conversation before continuing, "Besides, the Wen family would never attack anyone without cause. Something must have happened, we must investigate!"

## Chapter 1264: Love Rival (1)

---

Murong Qian was very irritated but she could not say anything against that. She stomped her feet angrily and spat sulkily, "Fine, Elder, let's get this over with and hurry back. If that kid Qianbei Ye gets away, I don't know when we'll be able to find him again."

"Don't worry, we'll resolve the fight very quickly and help you find Qianbei Ye."

The elder smiled calmly but his expression was filled with exasperation.

The Eldest Lady may be the direct descendant of a Great Protector but she chooses to run around willy-nilly chasing after a man. If this gets out, the entire Murong family name would be put to shame. Besides, that Qianbei Ye person had never expressed much interest in her.

However, the elder also understood the Eldest Lady's character. The more unobtainable the object, the more she would work and take painstaking efforts to obtain it!

"Come, let's head back to Forest City!"

The elder steadied his expression as he ordered in a cold voice.

...

At the courtyard in the Lin family residence, the sounds of battle had completely covered Lin Yun's mournful shrieks. The entire courtyard was now filled with smoke and dust.

"Your attacks are useless!"

Wen Yan laughed and spat disdainfully when Grand Lord Hong Lian attacked him again. He then met the Grand Lord's attack.

Their fists collided in the air with a crash. A huge amount of energy was discharged, badly mutilating the nearby Lin family disciples. However, Wen Luo, who had sharply educated Gu

Ruoyun and the others in a self-righteous manner, was not very concerned about this. He had no pity for the casualties on the Lin family's side.

Grand Lord Hong Lian took several steps back. His red robes had fluttered open from the sheer force of that attack, revealing his buff and healthy physique.

Even though he was dressed shabbily at the moment, it could not hide his magnificent stature.

"Brother Tian."

Dongfang Yu's eyes flashed as she turned towards Grand Lord Hong Lian. Her icy gaze then turned to look at Wen Luo as a cold aura whirled from within her.

"Wen Luo."

Just as the situation between both parties has grown more serious, an indifferent voice suddenly sounded from the sky. The crowd then watched as a group of old men and a young woman pierced through the sky and headed towards the space above the Lin family home.

"It's you!"

Murong Qian recognized Dongfang Yu immediately and laughed icily. "This is indeed an inevitable clash between opposing factions. I never thought that the source of this disturbance would turn out to be you two!" she exclaimed in disdain.

Dongfang Yu did not expect the Murong family to come back here either. She raised her willowy brows but the cold air from within her did not diminish. Instead, her chilly aura soon turned the entire courtyard glacial until all of them felt as if they were living in a house made of ice.

"You're here?" Wen Luo glanced at the Murong family and his face no longer displayed his initial arrogance. "Since you're here, let's join forces and kill these people!"

Wen Luo glared scornfully at the husband and wife before him as he spoke. In his eyes, they were nothing better than dead meat. His lips were curled into a cruel angle.

"What? The dignified Great Protectors are going to oppress us with their numbers?" Dongfang Yu smiled coldly. Her face was shrouded in a cold light as her eyes stared icily at the group who had just arrived.

"Hmph!"

Murong Qian's entire face looked very haughty as she replied in a rough, spoilt, and headstrong manner, "Sl\*t. Initially, I had intended to let you off the hook yet I never thought that you would serve yourself up on a silver platter for us to kill you! The Great Protectors have power and influence under the heavens. Not only have you offended the Murong family but you've also provoked the Wen family. Do you think that you'll be able to walk out of here alive?"

## Chapter 1265: Love Rival (2)

---

"Yun'er, you should move further away."

Dongfang Yu lowered her head as her lips curled into an ice-cold angle. "Our fight might spill over to you later!"

"Don't worry." Gu Ruoyun shook her head. "You can rest assured, I'll take care of myself."

Dongfang Yu nodded when she heard this and turned away, returning her attention to Murong Qian.

"Initially, I had not wanted to be calculative with you because you look like you've been spoiled rotten from a young age. However, since you insist on causing trouble for me, I, Dongfang Yu, am no coward either. I don't care if you belong to one of the Three Great Protectors, I'd love to see if the First City's Governor will protect you!"

"What savage words." Wen Luo laughed icily. "Our Lord Governor has never been concerned over the First City's matters. Everything is left to us, the Three Great Protectors, to manage however we want! Of course, I'm afraid that the Lord Governor will never grant you an audience based on your status so you'd better stop asking for trouble!"

"What are you all chatting with her for?" Murong Qian gritted her teeth and snapped vexingly, "Kill this woman immediately!"

Wen Luo furrowed his brows, clearly unhappy with Murong Qian's orders. However, he did not say much else as he turned his arrogant gaze upon Dongfang Yu.

"Even with your powers combined, the two of you are of no match for me. Now, with so many people joining the fight, you have no chance of winning at all! Grand Lord Hong Lian, let me ask you one more time, do you regret the massacre you've committed?"

Grand Lord Hong Lian burst into laughter. "I never believed that

I've done anything wrong. They are all people who deserve to die! Are you saying that you will only allow the Lin family members to kill me but I cannot retaliate? If this is the system of regulation in the First City, a place where all cultivators would dearly crack their heads to enter, I can only say that it doesn't live up to its reputation at all."

"Hmph!" Wen Luo scoffed coldly and exclaimed with a flick of his sleeves, "I've already given you one last chance yet you've wasted it. In that case, I must kill all of you for the sake of the mainland's common folk!"

"Pfft!"

As Wen Luo's rage was rising, someone chuckled softly.

His facial expression turned even angrier as his eyes glared at the chortling Gu Ruoyun, "What are you laughing about?"

"Once upon a time, there was an organization which was far very similar to the Wen family in the West Spirit Mainland." Gu Ruoyun raised the corners of her lips into a forced smile. "That place was known as the Immortal Realm. I believe the Lin family will have some inkling of this! The Immortal Realm was once one of the Three Great Authorities of the mainland but only the magistrates were allowed to burn down houses while the common people were forbidden even to light lamps. To them, they had the right to kill anyone they wanted while anyone else who does the same will be condemned as savages, worst than beasts!"

Gu Ruoyun raised her head and turned towards Wen Luo's increasingly ugly expression as her smile grew even more pronounced.

"The Wen family and the Immortal Realm are cut from the same cloth. Looks like there are organizations like these everywhere."

Wen Luo laughed icily, "Do you know why? That's because we hold this world in our hands. As the people who hold absolute

control over this land, we can kill but you can't! It's your fault for lacking the power to surpass me! Therefore, you have no choice but to accept the rules we've set. If you dare to oppose us, you will die!"

"I hope you remember what you've just said today."

Gu Ruoyun glanced at Wen Luo calmly and softly murmured, "Zixie, come on out."



## Chapter 1266: Love Rival (3)

---

As soon as she had spoken, the sky turned pitch black. A ray of purple light then shot into the air, turning into a purple phoenix which covered almost half the sky. The heavens were now fully blanketed by dark clouds, making the purple phoenix look particularly striking.

"This little girl is my Master. If anyone dares to lay a hand on her, I don't mind killing all of you."

Whoosh!

A ray of purple light encircled the phoenix's body. Its body gradually grew longer within the light. After a period of time, a handsome, demonic-looking man in reddish-purple robes slowly stepped out into the sky.

Murong Qian's eyes turned from astonishment to surprise as she stared, mildly dazed, at Zixie who had stepped out from the void.

The most gorgeous man she had ever met in this lifetime was the silver-haired and crimson-robed Qianbei Ye. She never thought that there was anyone in this world who would be on the same level as Qianbei Ye in terms of looks. However, Qianbei Ye's beauty was the kind of beauty which could drive all living things into insanity. The man in front of her was demonic and godlike, making it hard for one to tear their eyes away from him.

"Be it Qianbei Ye or this man, I want them all 1!"

Murong Qian narrowed her eyes. This man is very powerful, he's certainly on par with Qianbei Ye. If I can have this man and make him loyal to me, perhaps I could use his power to bring Qianbei Ye to me!

As for this man...

Even though he's more beautiful than I could have ever imagined, unfortunately, he is still a spiritual beast!

As a spiritual beast, he will always only exist as a tool for humans. Which human would want to marry a spiritual beast?

Of course, if Murong Qian had never met Qianbei Ye, she might have put Zixie into consideration as well...

"Eldest Lady."

The elder shook his head in exasperation. How could he have been so blind? To the Eldest Lady, she will always get what she wants no matter what!

This applies to Qianbei Ye and the spiritual beast in front of them as well.

As long as she fancies them, she must obtain it!

"The Ancient Divine Phoenix?"

Dongfang Yu recognized Zixie's identity immediately and turned towards Gu Ruoyun in astonishment.

She certainly never expected her precious little daughter to hold such a powerful spiritual beast in her possession!

"Let's attack together!"

Wen Luo's eyes darkened as he commanded in a cold voice, "No matter how powerful this fellow is, he's only one person while there's so many of us. Why should we be afraid of him? Besides, if we can obtain such a powerful spiritual beast, this will greatly boost the Great Protectors' powers. By then, no one would be of any match for us."

The elder did not reply as he stared at the man who was descending from the sky. His eyes were filled with seriousness.

"Wen Luo, we'd better be careful. I can sense that his power is not like any other. Besides, unless my guess is wrong, he's the mythical Ancient Divine Phoenix!"

The Ancient Divine Phoenix!

Those words entered into Murong Qian's ears and made her gnash her teeth with jealousy. "Why had the Ancient Divine Phoenix acknowledged such a Master? Such a precious thing should be stored for safe-keeping in the First City! Elder, don't kill him. Otherwise, it would be too much of a waste. I want this phoenix to recognize me as its Master!"

She then raised her head and stared at Zixie. Her eyes were filled with a determination for victory.

Zixie had caught every single word of their conversation and that made his demonic face rise into a disdainful smile. He then slowly turned his purple eyes towards the crowd on the ground before gently lifted his hand...

## Chapter 1267: Love Rival (4)

---

Bang!

A purple light fell from the sky and flew straight towards Murong Qian's head.

"Watch out, Eldest Lady!"

The elder's expression changed drastically as he swiftly pulled Murong Qian to his side. Just as he had pulled her aside, the purple light landed with a loud crash and carved a deep chasm where she was standing just a moment ago.

Murong Qian was scared silly. If the elder had not pulled her aside, her life would have ended right here, right now.

She could not help but shiver at the thought of this and quickly hid behind the elder.

"Hmph!" The elder scoffed icily as his eyes stared eerily at Zixie who was in the air. "As a powerful cultivator, what do you have to prove by attacking a woman? If you have the ability, fight us honorably!"

No matter how much the elder dislikes Murong Qian, she was still the Eldest Lady of the Murong family and the Master's favorite granddaughter.

Protecting her was his responsibility.

How could he ever allow anyone to do such a thing under his watchful eye?

Zixie's lips curled into an eerily cold angle before his indifferent voice rang out, "The way she had looked at me was disgusting. Hence, the first person I'm going to kill is her!"

Murong Qian's little face turned white and she did not dare to say anything else. She did not even have the courage to look in Zixie's direction, afraid that she might accidentally end up killed.

"You're digging your own grave!"

A swift and forceful light flickered in the elder's eyes before he sped swiftly towards Zixie. The elder then aimed a forceful attack towards that flash of purple robes.

Zixie glanced at him indifferently as an infinitely powerful aura rose from his body. The elder's speedy figure instantly stalled in the middle of the whirling aura.

Zixie then abruptly disappeared from the air before reappearing behind the elder.

He had a purple lightning sword in his hand and his eyes were filled with cruelty as he brought the sword down mercilessly.

Clash!

The elder quickly turned around and blocked the downward slash of the sword. Instantly, a wave of energy cascaded from the sword into his chest, causing him to stumble several steps back. The elder's face drained of color and he almost spat out a mouthful of blood.

"I'll help you."

Wen Luo's eyes darkened and he attempted to rush over to help the elder but was blocked by Grand Lord Hong Lian.

"What are you trying to prove by ganging up on someone with your superior numbers? We shall be the ones to deal with you!"

Grand Lord Hong Lian laughed icily as his disdainful glare landed upon Wen Luo.

Wen Luo's usual arrogant expression has now turned absolutely unsightly. He gritted his teeth and snapped, "Gu Tian, Dongfang Yu, as a result of making us your enemy, it won't end well for you two!"

"Hahaha!"

Grand Lord Hong Lian burst into laughter, "This is all the

dignified Wen family cultivator can say! They will change their status as a Great Protector at any given time! However, did you really think that I, Gu Tian, am the type of person who would shrink back for fear of other organizations? If that had been the case, I would not be where I am today!"

Boom!

Grand Lord Hong Lian did not say anything else after this as he instantly launched an attack at Wen Yan...

Murong Qian's hands were balled into tight fists. Her face was filled with anxiety before her gaze drifted towards Gu Ruoyun who was standing all alone on the side. A light then flashed in her eyes and she charged towards her.

As long as I capture this woman, would I still need to worry about keeping their hands off me?

Gu Ruoyun did not seem to notice Murong Qian's actions as her eyes continued to stare unblinkingly at the battle between both parties.

## Chapter 1268: Love Rival (5)

---

After all, the further one has advanced, the harder it was for them get another breakthrough.

Hence, it was not easy for anyone to witness a fight amongst cultivators at this stage.

This was why Gu Ruoyun had been observing everyone's movements very closely during the fight. There was nothing else within her sight right now except for the figures in the battlefield which were reflected in her clear and cold pupils.

"Is this a fight between cultivators in the refined state?" Gu Ruoyun could not tear her eyes away from the scene. She knows that Murong Qian was charging towards her but she did not take any action at all.

As she observed the fight, Gu Ruoyun suddenly came to a realization. It was as if she had been enlightened by the purest wisdom, awakening her completely.

"Damned girl, now that you're in my grasp, I want to put you all in a state of utter misery!"

A murderous intent flashed in Murong Qian's eyes as she approached Gu Ruoyun.

Murong Qian raised her hand and aimed it forcefully at Gu Ruoyun's neck. Her tender and pampered features filled with a vicious light while the smile on her face was utterly complacent.

So what if were other more powerful cultivators around? With this early-stage Martial Saint good-for-nothing standing right here, she would never be a match for the Three Great Protectors no matter how strong she can become!

Boom!

She was almost next to Gu Ruoyun when a wave of energy

exploded above them, sending Murong Qian flying out of the way.

Her eyes were wide with shock and her body began to tremble.

This woman has had a breakthrough at a time like this?

Due to the protective laws of heaven and earth, one cannot harm a cultivator in the middle of a breakthrough. Hence, Murong Qian's eyes were spitting fire as she glared fixedly at the green-robed figure beneath the hurricane...

"This woman had just achieved a breakthrough by studying our battle?"

The elder, who was in the middle of the fight with Zixie, paused as his eyes flickered. "Such great talent! If we allowed her to grow, it would bring a reign of terror upon the First City. No, we must kill her now!"

Clearly, Wen Luo had the very same thought as well. The two of them quickly abandoned their enemies and charged swiftly towards Gu Ruoyun, bringing a powerful murderous intent along with them.

"Yun'er!"

Grand Lord Hong Lian's face drained of color as he chased after them. A raging flame exploded from within his being as his black eyes grew even colder. "If any of you dare to lay a finger on my daughter, I will raise a great pandemonium upon the Three Great Protectors!"

Boom!

Just as Wen Luo and the elder were about to reach Gu Ruoyun, a powerful energy erupted around them. Before they could react, their bodies were flung out of the way and landed on the ground.

Slam!

The two men had collapsed onto the ground. They could only raise their heads in astonishment before their eyes landed on the



man standing in front of Gu Ruoyun.

He was silver-haired and dressed in red robes, magnificent and peerless!

The man's features were so beautiful that everything else turned pale in contrast. His silver hair was dancing gently in the wind, making him look even more noble and peerless. His devilish red eyes were turned towards the crowd on the ground and a cold, sharp murderous intent flashed in his pupils.

Zixie, who was standing in the air, did not react at all. He had not rushed towards Gu Ruoyun like Grand Lord Hong Lian because he knew that this man had arrived...

However, this man had not shown himself and had stayed hidden in the dark.

Only this move could have forced this man from the shadows.

"Little girl, this is all I can do for you now." Zixie smiled bitterly.

He understood how much Gu Ruoyun had longed for Qianbei Ye. Hence, he had resorted to using this method to force Qianbei Ye out from hiding...

## Chapter 1269: Love Rival (6)

---

"Xiao Ye?"

Gu Ruoyun stared at the man before her as her eyes filled with mild excitement. "You're here?"

Qianbei Ye did not turn around. His gloomy gaze had remained fixed upon the people in front of him. A murderous intent then erupted from within him before he took a step forward and approached the group.

"Qianbei Ye!"

Murong Qian was shocked when she saw the man. She soon returned to her senses and was gripped with a strong sense of surprise.

"You've finally shown yourself. Don't you know how it was for me to find you?"

She had immediately changed her initially haughty demeanor and put on a coquettish act towards Qianbei Ye.

Her grandfather had advised her that if she wanted to have a man's heart, using force would be counterproductive. She had to use her gentle, womanly wiles to warm him up.

"Since you're here now, come with me, I don't care about anything else. As long as I have you, that is enough." Murong Qian smiled coquettishly as she stepped forward and reached out to grab Qianbei Ye's sleeve. However, before her fingers could touch him, she was horrified...

Aside from that man's gloomy and cold stare, most of his expression was filled with a blood-thirsty murderous intent. His red eyes showed no signs of emotion and looked as if he could strangle her at any time.

Murong Qian was dazed and she did not have the courage to

make any further moves. Her eyes then filled with grief as if she was denouncing the man's cruelty.

"This hand of yours, you don't want it anymore?"

Qianbei Ye had lowered his head and looked at her outstretched hand before taking two steps towards her. A gloomy atmosphere erupted around them and his voice was completely devoid of warmth.

"If you don't want it anymore, I don't mind making it disappear!"

Murong Qian shivered before she bit her lip and scolded angrily, "Qianbei Ye, don't be so shameless! If you had not murdered my fiancé, I would not have wanted you to marry me in the first place! Even without you, there are many people lining up to become my husband. However, you don't know how to appreciate what's good for you. Elder, take him away. The more he refuses, the more I want to force him into my bed 1 !"

"My Lady!"

The elder's expression changed drastically and he looked at Qianbei Ye, shocked.

How much time had passed since they last encountered him?

This man's power has greatly increased from before. Now, dealing with him would be even more difficult.

"Elder, what are you standing around for? Get that damned bastard!" ordered Murong Qian as she gnashed her teeth hatefully.

Why can't Qianbei Ye fall for a good maiden like me 2 ?

However, once she has taken a liking to something or someone, she would not see any reason to give it up!

"My Lady, don't anger him!"

The elder quickly pulled Murong Qian aside when he sensed Qianbei Ye's murderous intent which pierced the air and stared fearfully at the frightening man. He gritted his teeth, stuffed a

circular wooden token in her hand and said, "Here's a teleportation token, leave this place, quickly!"

"I'm not going anywhere!"

Murong Qian placed her hands on her hips and stubbornly exclaimed, "Even if I do leave, I'm taking this man with me!"

It was not an easy task for her to find him so how could she leave empty-handed?

"Xiao Ye, you really do love stirring up trouble everywhere you go."

Gu Ruoyun sighed exasperatedly before she smiled calmly.

She trusts Qianbei Ye but that does not mean that other women could covet her man!

"What did you just call him?"

Murong Qian has furious.

She would never allow anyone else to covet the things she wants!

Murong Qian glared fiercely at Gu Ruoyun, "You have the audacity to address him as Xiao Ye! Don't you know that he belongs to me? No one is allowed to address him in such an intimate manner aside from myself. If you dare to address him in this manner again, I will have your body torn limb from limb by five horses!"

## Chapter 1270: Love Rival (7)

---

It was obvious that Qianbei Ye had rushed out to save Gu Ruoyun from the very beginning.

However, Murong Qian does not believe that they were acquainted.

To her, Qianbei Ye was trying to pick a fight with the Murong family. Hence, he had saved Gu Ruoyun because the Murong family was attacking her.

"My Lady!"

However, the elder could sense that the relationship between Gu Ruoyun and Qianbei Ye was no ordinary one. Therefore, when he heard Murong Qian's damning statement, his elderly face changed drastically once again and he hurriedly pulled Murong Qian behind him.

However, it was already too late...

Boom!

A powerful energy, as sharp as a sword drawn from its sheath, slammed onto Murong Qian's body.

Murong Qian was sent flying out of the way like an arrow released from a bow and thrown onto the frigid ground.

P'tui!

Murong Qian spat out a mouthful of blood. She rose to her feet with a pale look on her face and quickly pulled out a broken yellow armor from her robes.

Her grandfather had given this yellow armor to her. As long as she wears this armor, she would be protected from any attack! However, this yellow armor has now been destroyed by Qianbei Ye's attack. If it had not been for that yellow armor, she would have been killed by his attack immediately!

This man really wants to kill me!

Murong Qian bit her lip hard as she staring fixedly at Qianbei Ye's peerless features. She then gritted her teeth and said, "Qianbei Ye, you will regret looking down on a good maiden like me!"

"My Lady, run!"

The elder roared his command at Murong Qian before he transformed into a sharp sword and charged towards Qianbei Ye.

The elder sensed an eerie and cold aura just as he reached Qianbei Ye. Suddenly, a hand landed on his head.

"You had taken advantage of my absence and tried to hurt my woman."

Qianbei Ye curled the corners of his lips and smiled creepily. "The Murong family must disappear from this world because of your actions."

Splatter!

Qianbei Ye only moved his hand slightly for the elder's head to explode like a balloon. Blood and brains stained the ground but that man's features had remained cold and gloomy.

It was as if he had just cracked an insignificant egg...

Woman!

Qianbei Ye actually called that damned b\\*tch his woman!\*

Murong Qian gritted her teeth as she pulled out the teleportation token which the elder had given to her, snapping it into two forcefully. A ray of light then descended upon her, followed by her maniacal shriek which echoed throughout the Lin family courtyard...

"Qianbei Ye, you will become my man sooner or later! I will never allow you to have any other woman. She must die!"

Qianbei Ye's expression sank as a murderous intent flashed in his

eyes.

"The Murong family..."

Now that someone from the Murong family has declared their intention to kill Gu Ruoyun, he would never let them live!

"Who on earth are you?"

Wen Luo's eyes were filled with terror. The man before him has a horrifying amount of power.

The elder from the Murong family's power was around the same level as Wen Luo but, in that man's hand, he had only needed one move to land a killing strike...

The Murong family elders looked at one another before they all tried to escape.

However, how could Zixie, who had been standing in midair, possibly give them that opportunity?

The Flames of World Devastation descended from the sky. The elders who had failed to escape were instantly turned to ashes by the Flames of World Devastation. They did not even have the time to beg for mercy...

"Hehe."

Wen Luo shut his eyes and laughed scornfully, "I confess that you all have great abilities. However, you're not even worth mentioning when compared to the Great Protectors! The Great Protectors' powers are far beyond your imagination. It will never end well for you if you go up against us."

## Chapter 1271: Love Rival (8)

---

Wham!

Wen Luo raised his hand before slamming it onto the top of his skull. The others watched as his body slowly collapsed to the ground.

Qianbei Ye knows that Wen Luo was speaking the truth.

The Murong family members who were here this time were not on par with the ones he had faced previously! Based on his current measure of power, even if he had faced the previous group, they would not need to forcefully raise their powers in order to be evenly matched with him in battle...

"Yun'er."

Qianbei Ye did not give Wen Luo's body a second glance as he turned around and walked towards Gu Ruoyun's side. He then reached out his hand and pulled her into his embrace.

His previously dark and gloomy gaze was now filled with absolute tenderness while his silvery hair danced softly in the wind. It was such a magnificent and peerless sight that it could drive all living things to madness.

"I'm back."

Yes, he was back!

He has returned to see her.

"Xiao Ye..." Gu Ruoyun gently lifted the corners of her lips and smiled at him. "Welcome back."

She did not ask him why he had not kept his promise because she knows that Qianbei Ye would have his reasons for not making it back to Wind Valley on time.

She chooses to trust him no matter what.



"Ahem."

Grand Lord Hong Lian cleared his throat and chimed in with a melancholic voice, "Can you two exercise a little restraint, can't you see that there are other people here?"

"Yun'er," Dongfang Yu chuckled as her eyes continued to measure Qianbei Ye from head to toe. "Aren't you going to introduce him to me? Is this..."

Gu Ruoyun was just about to reply when Grand Lord Hong Lian cut her off.

"This damned kid has been intertwined with our precious daughter countless times. However, he hasn't completely passed all of my tests so I am not acknowledging him as my son-in-law for the time being."

What a joke.

I want my daughter to stay with me for a few more years. Why should I let this damned kid off so easily?

"I think he's alright." Dongfang Yu smiled with satisfaction. "Let's not interfere in this matter, they can handle themselves. What do you think, Brother Tian?"

"But..."

Grand Lord Hong Lian was still feeling very reluctant. Before he could complete his sentence, he caught Dongfang Yu's look.

"Brother Tian," Dongfang Yu raised her lips into a smile as she turned around to look at Grand Lord Hong Lian. "How about I sleep at Yun'er's room for the next few days and you can sleep on your own? I'm worried that Yun'er feels lonely and does not have anyone to talk to."

A threat!

This was indeed a threat!

There was no way Grand Lord Hong Lian would miss the hidden

meaning behind Dongfang Yu's words. He forcefully took a deep breath and glared at Qianbei Ye. "You're lucky, kid, even my wife is on your side. Since that's the case, I am forced to accept you."

It was bad enough that he had not seen Dongfang Yu for so many years. Therefore, he must have good relations with her at night. How could he let her leave so easily?

Fine, fine. Daughters will get married sooner or later. This kid is rather powerful and is quite infatuated with her. At least my daughter wouldn't run into any grief if she stays with him.

"Thank you, mother-in-law."

The man's peerless and beautiful features lit up with a smile while his eyes filled with banter. "Since that's the case, father-in-law, mother-in-law, would you agree if I were to take Yun'er as my wife?"

"We'll have the wedding ceremony after Shengxiao has rejoined us." Grand Lord Hong Lian then fell silent for a moment before he replied. "However, I'd like to give you one last test. If you can pass that, I won't stop you from marrying my daughter anymore."

## Chapter 1272: Love Rival (9)

---

"What's the test, father-in-law?"

Qianbei Ye raised his brow as he asked.

"Before you get married, you can't have any intimate relations with my daughter. If you can put up with it, I'll agree to let her marry you."

Gu Ruoyun could not help but rub her nose when she heard this. She had promised Qianbei Ye the last time they had parted that she would give him a child when he returned! However, she never expected her father to make such a decision.

Gu Ruoyun lifted her head and looked at Qianbei Ye as if she was waiting for his answer.

"Alright, I promise."

Qianbei Ye carefully considered this and agreed to Grand Lord Hong Lian's request.

There will be ample time for that later. He was not too anxious about that moment. Forget about suppressing about his desires, even if he had to give up everything he has, he would have no regrets as long as he could take her home as his wife.

"Remember your promise, kid." Grand Lord Hong Lian finally smiled but did not forget to send Qianbei Ye a stern warning. "If I ever find out that you've touched my precious daughter, you can forget about becoming my son-in-law! If you can't even endure that, I will never be able to believe in your sincerity towards my daughter."

"Don't worry, I won't touch her before our wedding."

Of course, it would be an entirely different case after the wedding.

After all, she would have already have become his wife. So

playing fast and loose would be expected...

"Yu'er, let me take care of the rest of the Lin family members. You should go back to the guest house and rest with Yun'er."

After Grand Lord Hong Lian had issued his warning to Qianbei Ye, he then turned towards Dongfang Yu and spoke gently.

Dongfang Yu nodded. "Alright, we shall wait for you back at the guest house."

She then walked towards Gu Ruoyun and Qianbei Ye. However, her expression sank when she turned around.

Master had previously mentioned that the Lin family isn't the true instigator. There was an even more powerful force backing the Lin family.

If my guess is correct, that force should be the Wen family!

Otherwise, they would not have appeared in Forest City...

"The Great Protectors?" Dongfang Yu laughed bitterly before she sighed softly. "It seems that the road ahead is going to be a long one."

...

At the First City.

The Governor's Palace.

Seated at the table in the meeting room were the Masters of the Three Great Protectors as well as the First City's Governor.

A handsome-looking man was seated at the Master's seat at the foremost of the table. He was dressed in white robes and his features were cold and stern, carrying a sacred and inviolable air. His fingers drummed against the table, giving off a rather nerve-wracking feeling.

"I heard that there was an incident at Forest City recently?" The Governor swept his glare across the group as he asked in a neutral

voice.

Everyone in the group felt their hearts skip a beat. They had been trying to figure out what would have caused the secretive Lord Governor to emerge. It seems that he has heard of the matter in Forest City?

"It's like this." Elder Ouyang glanced at the other two people in the room before he slowly explained, "A while ago, Grand Lord Hong Lian had gone to the Lin family to exact his revenge! He had violated the First City's rules by clashing with the Wen and Murong family as well. They had joined forces to deal with Grand Lord Hong Lian and his party. Who would have thought that those two people were so powerful? they then caused the tragic deaths of cultivators from the Wen and Murong family. Only Murong Qian had managed to escape."

However, Murong Qian has suffered an enormous shock which caused an abnormality in her mental state.

## Chapter 1273: Love Rival (10)

---

Due to Murong Qian's current state, the Murong family's Master was extremely angry and had decided to send powerful cultivators to destroy the group so he could vent his frustrations over his precious granddaughter's treatment!

"This matter was originally the Lin family's fault." The Governor stared at the crowd calmly before he continued to speak in a dignified manner. "Would this have happened if the Lin family had not committed so many sins? Don't assume that I'm unaware of the Lin family's actions. Did they think that they could keep it all from me just because they had not sent out their best cultivators?"

Elder Wen shivered and quickly lowered his head.

After all, he was the one who had indulged the Lin family all these years, giving them the audacity to send cultivators out to assassinate people from the secular world.

"I can let bygones be bygones for past mistakes but you aren't permitted to commit the same mistake twice. As for the matter surrounding the Lin family, let it be. No one is allowed to involve themselves in this any further!" The Governor calmly declared before he turned towards the sour-faced Murong elder. "I know that your granddaughter had been hurt and that you are out of sorts. However, even if you're not happy about it, you will still have to tolerate it. This matter was the Lin family's fault in the first place. If this gets out, people will think that the First City's Governor's Palace is bullying others!"

He had to use the Lin family's past sins as an excuse to warn them because the Secret Order would never allow him to expose Dongfang Yu's identity! If they continue to attack Grand Lord Hong Lian and Dongfang Yu, he was afraid that they would soon draw the Secret Order's ire.

The Secret Order was so powerful that even the First City's

Governor has to give way to them.

Besides, Dongfang Yu was the Sacred Lady of the Secret Order...

"Governor, would the Murong family members have died for nothing then?"

The Murong family's elder scoffed, clearly not satisfied with the Governor's decision.

The Governor frowned and sent him an icy glare. "Murong Yang, you should be aware of the Murong family's movements more than anyone else. Hence, I'd advise you to educate your granddaughter. If she ends up crossing someone that she shouldn't cross, I won't shield you."

Murong Yang's elderly features were now a particularly ugly sight. He scoffed again but did not object to the Governor's words anymore. He restrained his resentment and kept it all in.

"Grand Lord Hong Lian, Dongfang Yu, their daughter, and Qianbei Ye..."

Murong Yang sighed internally when he thought of those names. He then muttered viciously, "I won't let them get away!"

Even though Murong Yan had only uttered these words in his heart, the Governor could see his thoughts from his face. He laughed icily. Looks like it's time for me to give the Murong family several tasks. Otherwise, this old man would never leave Dongfang Yu alone so easily.

"You are dismissed."

The Governor then rose to his feet as he stared icily at the group.

"I was the one who had appointed all of you as the Great Protectors in the First City. That's how you had got the position in the first place! If you continue to commit sins, it may be time for us to change the members of the Great Protectors."

After saying his piece, the Governor straightened his sleeves. He

then turned around and left without a second look back.

Murong Yang took a deep breath, turned around towards Elder Wen and asked, "Are you going to put up with this resentment?"

Elder Wen's eyes flickered as a sharp light flashed from within. He suddenly laughed but there was an eerie bloodlust in his smile.

"Put up with this? How can I possibly put up with it? As long as Grand Lord Hong Lian is alive, the Wen family will die by his hand sooner or later. He must be killed!"



# Chapter 1274: Early-Stage Exceptional State

## (1)

---

The situation facing the Wen family was different from the Murong family. Back then, the Wen family had been the ones directing the Lin family's actions behind the scenes. If Grand Lord Hong Lian and his wife were to find out about this, would the Wen family ever know peace again?

Hence, Grand Lord Hong Lian has to disappear from this world. Only then can the Wen family's safety be guaranteed!

"You two better don't do anything rash," Elder Ouyang eyed the two as he spoke. "The Governor is furious now. If you do something that can't be undone, the Governor might absolve your positions as Great Protectors. Weigh the possibilities, you should reconsider this properly."

Elder Wen laughed icily. "Reconsider? There's nothing to reconsider, Grand Lord Hong Lian must die!"

No matter how angry the Governor was, he would not possibly destroy the Wen family as a consequence! Grand Lord Hong Lian, on the other hand, would actually do such a thing.

At this moment, Elder Wen never would have thought that his stubborn nature would cause a far more horrible conclusion than the destruction of their family in the future! Unfortunately, he would only begin to feel regret then. If he had curbed himself a little earlier, he might not have received such a tragic ending...

Murong Yang did not say anything more. However, it was very obvious that he had the same thoughts as Elder Wen.

They know that Grand Lord Hong Lian was the type of person who would harbor bitter resentment. If they allow him to live, there was a big chance that he would come to the Murong family home to deal with them...

Elder Ouyang furrowed his brows as he suddenly decided to sever ties with these two families. He does not want to be dragged down by their sins. After all, there was no bad blood between Grand Lord Hong Lian and him so he does not have any intentions of participating any further in this matter...

It was nightfall.

The glow of moonlight was as clear as water and all was quiet and still.

Qianbei Ye looked at the sleeping woman next to him and pulled her into a tight embrace. His lips then curled into a smile. "Yun'er, I'm sorry, I still have other important matters to complete so I will be leaving after this. Once I'm done with that, I'll come to look for you again!"

He thought that Gu Ruoyun was fast asleep which was why he had said those things. However, after he spoke, the woman, whose eyes had been shut, suddenly opened them. Her eyes immediately turned towards the man's beautiful face.

"Xiao Ye, you still won't tell me anything."

"Yun'er?"

Qianbei Ye was surprised. He did not think that she would still be awake. He cradled her figure firmly.

"The things that I need to do are far too dangerous. If you follow me, I wouldn't be able to feel assured of your safety."

"Xiao Ye," Gu Ruoyun lifted her eyes and stared at the man's peerlessly beautiful face. "Ever since I've decided to accept you, I've never hidden anything from you. You, on the other hand, had always chosen to solve everything on your own and you are unwilling to let me accompany you."

"I know that my powers aren't strong enough but I will keep working on it. As long as I can help you, I will increase my level of power quickly even if I have to risk my life."

Gu Ruoyun's voice was full of resolution and did not hold her usual cold manner. It was rather moving.

"Yun'er, I'm sorry." Qianbei Ye stared at the woman in his arms apologetically. "I..."

"Xiao Ye!"

Before Qianbei Ye could finish his sentence, Gu Ruoyun cut him off.

"We are engaged so that means that we'll have to face everything together! Besides..." Gu Ruoyun paused. "Weren't you injured recently?"

Qianbei Ye laughed bitterly. I couldn't hide my wounds from her in the end.

I had stayed away from her was because I didn't want her to see my injuries so that she wouldn't have to worry about me.

# Chapter 1275: Early-Stage Exceptional State

## (2)

---

He never thought that she would see right through him in the end...

"I'm fine, I'll be healed once I've time to recuperate." Qianbei Ye tightened his embrace around Gu Ruoyun and spoke again in a gentle voice, "Yun'er, I promise you that from now on, I won't ever hide anything from you. We'll face everything together, alright?"

Gu Ruoyun gently nodded when she heard those words. She returned Qianbei Ye's embrace tightly as she stared at him.

"Are you still going to leave?"

"No, I'm not."

Qianbei Ye smiled. Their time together was so precious that he would treasure it every day.

"Let's go to sleep, Yun'er."

"Okay."

Gu Ruoyun smiled and buried herself into Qianbei Ye's chest before she slowly closed her eyes...

The Secret Order.

An old woman with dazzlingly white hair was seated upright at the main seat in the ancestral hall. Her face was focused and there was a sense of seriousness in her gaze. However, no one could tell what she was thinking.

"Clan Leader."

The elder who was seated in front of her fell silent for a while before saying, "I can sense that the seal at the back of the mountain will be broken very soon. If that happens, an unexpected disaster will befall the mainland!"

"That's correct." The old woman sighed. Her voice was full of exasperation as she continued, "If the seal breaks, then that person once again be unleashed on the mainland. By then, no one would be able to stop that person and the Secret Order's mission for so many years was to guard them."

The elder thought for a moment before suggesting, "Clan Leader, I have a suggestion. Since the breaking of the seal is inevitable, we can only prepare ourselves for it. Hence, why don't the Secret Order convene with the outside world and recruit some geniuses? With our guidance and the heavenly treasures that the Secret Order possesses, nurturing a genius would not be too strenuous for us."

"No." The old woman shook her head, rejecting the elder's suggestion. "Since we've decided to conceal ourselves from the world, we can't ever think of showing our presence to the mainland again! Besides, the Secret Order has lived in secrecy here for so many years. We won't be used to living outside. How can we face those people?"

"Clan Leader, even though the Secret Order is very powerful, we won't be able to withstand that person on our own! Besides, there are quite a few geniuses on the mainland. They only need some extra nurturing and they would become powerful cultivators. We'll need five years at the most. The seal is breaking soon and the mainland will soon suffer a reign of terror!"

The old woman laughed bitterly.

Is this the only way?

"Alright." She finally sighed and said, "We shall do as you've suggested in order to deal with that person. We will recruit more talents into the Secret Order! As for those who will manage this, I'll leave it to you to arrange it personally!"

"Yes, Clan Leader."

The elder joined his fists before he slowly walked away.

Once he had left, the old woman's eyes stared towards the back of the mountain. A bitter smile then formed on her face, "It's been ten thousand years. The Secret Order has been guarding this person for ten thousand years yet I never thought that it would come to this! Once the seal breaks, that person will return to their peak abilities. By then, who on this mainland would be able to stop them?"

No one was aware of the terrifying power of the person who was under the Secret Order's watchful eye. If they really do escape, the entire mainland would suffer a calamity...

Especially the Secret Order, it would be the first to be destroyed!

"Yu'er, I hope that you can grow a little faster and protect the Secret Order in that upcoming battle in five years!"

# Chapter 1276: Early-Stage Exceptional State

## (3)

---

The next day.

Gu Ruoyun had just stepped out of her bedroom in a guest house in Forest City when she came face-to-face with Grand Lord Hong Lian and Dongfang Yu who had both emerged from their room as well.

"Father, Mother, what's your next move?"

She had paused to think for a while before she asked.

Grand Lord Hong Lian and Dongfang Yu looked at each other before turning their attention to Gu Ruoyun.

"Yun'er, I need to head back to the Red Lotus Territory and bring the forces of Red Lotus Territory to the First City. Will you be returning with us or..."

"No."

Gu Ruoyun shook her head. "I still have some other matters to complete. You go back first, I'll wait for you in the First City."

"Alright." Grand Lord Hong Lian nodded. "Take good care of yourself."

With Qianbei Ye by her side, this little girl was far better protected than anyone else.

If that had not been the case, he would never have been able to leave with Dongfang Yu without worrying about Gu Ruoyun's safety...

After saying their goodbyes, both parties went their separate ways.

Gu Ruoyun took one last look at Grand Lord Hong Lian and Dongfang Yu as they left. She then turned around and said, "Xiao

Ye, let's go."

"Yun'er." Qianbei Ye raised his hand and pulled Gu Ruoyun into his arms. His lips were curled into a roguish smile. "Come with me, I'm taking you somewhere!"

"What?"

Gu Ruoyun was confused. Before she could return to her senses, her body was lifted into the sky and onto thin air.

The man's hand was holding onto her body gently and that reassuring feeling made her entire body relax. Her beautiful features were also enveloped in a tender light as she stared unblinkingly at the man's beautiful features.

"Xiao Ye, where are you taking me?"

Her heart was full of curiosity and she could not help but ask.

"You'll find out soon enough."

Qianbei Ye smiled secretively and did not give any more information to Gu Ruoyun. Instead, he swiftly made his way forward before turning into a crimson beam of light and disappearing into the void.

Gu Ruoyun felt a flash in front of her before they reappeared in front of a mountain cave. When she felt the powerful energy emanating from the cave, she stared at Qianbei Ye in astonishment. "Xiao Ye, this is..."

"I had hidden in this cave when I was wounded and also noticed the abnormalities within this cave. Come, let's go inside."

Qianbei Ye held Gu Ruoyun's hand as they walked into the cave.

A strange and sinister atmosphere filled the cave. From the moment she set foot in the cave, Gu Ruoyun could sense that something was not right. It was a good thing that she has the Ancient Divine Pagoda. With the addition of Qianbei Ye, it was far more tolerable.



"Xiao Ye, why have you brought me here?"

Gu Ruoyun raised her lips as she turned towards the peerless-looking man next to her and asked tenderly.

"Look..."

Qianbei Ye stopped and pointed in front of him. When Gu Ruoyun turned around, she felt a sinister aura whirling towards her.

An infinitely black-colored flame was hovering not too far away, releasing a strange light. It resonated with an intolerably eerie chill. The flames glared at the two intruders like a tiger watching its prey. It almost seemed as if it were opening its large mouth, ready to swallow them whole.

"This is..."

Gu Ruoyun was shocked. She does not know why but she could sense an extremely valiant energy from within the flames.

"This is the Nine Underworld Flames." Qianbei Ye smiled. "The Nine Underworld Flames is a rare treasure in this world. Once a cultivator consumes the Nine Underworld Flames, not only will they be able to control it, it can also increase their level of power as well."

# Chapter 1277: Early-Stage Exceptional State

## (4)

---

He then turned towards Gu Ruoyun as he continued to speak, "Of course, most people would be unable to consume the Nine Underworld Flames. Some would even end up losing their lives if they approached it. However, you are unlike them. You hold the Divine Weapon, the Nine Emperors. No flame would be able to burn you."

Gu Ruoyun walked towards the Nine Underworld Flames with slow and gradual steps, as if afraid that she would scare the black flames.

However, the black flames still managed to sense her presence and exploded immediately, eyeing covetously at the damned human.

"Nine Emperors!"

Gu Ruoyun summoned.

Bzzt!

As soon as she had spoken, the Nine Emperors, which had been lying still in her mind's eye, let out a buzzing noise. A powerful energy exploded and the black flames, which had intended to approach Gu Ruoyun, seemed to have received a shock and retreated in unison.

At that moment, Gu Ruoyun could sense it shiver.

Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh!

The black flames scattered as if they were extremely afraid of Gu Ruoyun's approach. Unfortunately, as they tried to scatter all over the place, Gu Ruoyun would always be right in front of them.

The black flames were now enraged!

Even though you've received help from the Nine Emperors, we are the Nine Underworld Flames. We don't want to hurt you anymore yet you intend to consume us! Since that's the case, we will consume you first even if we have to risk being suffocated by the Nine Emperors!

Hence, the flames no longer tried to hide themselves. They gathered together before charging towards Gu Ruoyun, carrying an aura of destruction.

"My apologies but the Nine Emperors is not the only weapon I have. I also hold Zixie's Flames of World Devastation. I really would like to compare whether the power of the Nine Underworld Flames is more powerful or if the Flames of World Devastation is on a higher level."

Boom!

Just as the black flames were about to reach Gu Ruoyun, her body was suddenly lit up by purple flames. Those flames released a scorching and demonic temperature which made the Nine Underworld Flames jump with fright.

"Are you trying to escape?"

Gu Ruoyun laughed when she noticed that the Nine Underworld Flames were retreating once again. She ran after them in one leap and caught the Nine Underworld Flames in the palm of her hand before swallowing them without another word.

Boom!

The Nine Underworld Flames began to crash all over inside her body in an attempt to smash their prison open and escape.

The powerful force caused Gu Ruoyun's body to shake but the cold smile on her face only deepened, "You can stop your senseless resistance, I'll never let you escape."

Whoosh!

Having said that, Gu Ruoyun began to channel the Flames of World Devastation and surrounded the black flames.

Under the pressure from the Nine Emperors and Flames of World Devastation, the Nine Underworld Flames finally stopped and slowly fused with Gu Ruoyun within the circle of purple flames...

Bang!

A powerful energy leaped from the top of her head, shooting up into the sky.

"A late-stage Martial Saint!"

Gu Ruoyun's heart leaped as she basked in the power from the breakthrough. However, her breakthrough was not over yet.

Just as her spiritual energy burst through the late-stage Martial Saint rank, it rose rapidly once again, reaching the area of the bottleneck immediately.

Boom!

Boom, boom!

The spiritual energy did not seem to want to stop as it rammed forcefully into the bottleneck. That paper-thin bottleneck was shattered once again, pushing into a whole new rank.

"I've reached the early-stage exceptional state!"

Gu Ruoyun took a deep breath, she has finally reached the exceptional state. She was no longer at the lowest rank in the First City.

"Xiao Ye, it's all thanks to you that I've been able to obtain such great power."

# Chapter 1278: Early-Stage Exceptional State (5)

---

Qianbei Ye smiled as he said, "I had discovered the Nine Underworld Flames by accident. Also, you were the only person in this world who can consume the Nine Underworld Flames. That's why I've brought you here."

After that, Gu Ruoyun did not say anything else as she sat down to consolidate the power she had received after her breakthrough.

Qianbei Ye did not disturb her and stood quietly at the side. However, his eyes had stayed fixed upon the woman's figure the entire time while his gaze filled with a tender smile.

Three days!

Gu Ruoyun had remained in the cave for three days as she solidified her cultivation. After all, she had raised her level by more than one rank and if she does not consolidate her powers, her foundation would become rather superficial. Qianbei Ye had been guarded her faithfully during these past three days and waited patiently for her to be done.

After three days, Gu Ruoyun finally consolidated her cultivation and opened her eyes.

"Xiao Ye, you must have been waiting for a long time."

She slowly rose to her feet and smiled at the man who was seated at the cave's entrance.

"Is it done?" Qianbei Ye rose to his feet when he saw her stand up. His peerless face was filled with a smile. "Congratulations, Yun'er, for breaking through to the exceptional state so quickly."

"This time, it's all thanks to your help that I've been able to break through so quickly."

Gu Ruoyun shrugged her shoulders. "Now, I'd like to witness the

Nine Underworld Flames' power."

She reached out her hand and tried to channel the Nine Underworld Flames.

Shua!

At that moment, a small black flame appeared in the palm of Gu Ruoyun's hand. However, when she saw the flame laughing, she was in shock...

"This is the Nine Underworld Flames?"

Isn't it a little too small...

"The Nine Underworld Flames' power grows in tandem with its Master's power. You have just broken through to the exceptional state now so the power you have isn't strong enough. However, with the Nine Underworld Flames in hand, you can surpass and defeat your enemies even without a spiritual weapon."

Qianbei Ye walked over towards Gu Ruoyun's side and curled his lips into an angle.

Gu Ruoyun looked somewhat melancholic. It seems that I'm still not powerful enough to display the full power of the Nine Underworld Flames.

"Senior Sister, I had found the Nine Underworld Flames over here a while ago."

Just then, someone spoke from outside the cave.

Gu Ruoyun mildly furrowed her brows and turned towards the sound of the voice. A light flickered in her eyes when she saw the people who had just entered the cave.

What an inevitable clash between opposing factions. I never expected to bump into them here!

"What are you doing here?"

Elder Mei was shocked as well as if she never imagined that Gu

Ruoyun would be here. After a long pause, she returned to her senses and scoffed icily, "Gu Nianye, it seems that you can be found everywhere. The only thing is, I wonder who you're trying to suck up to this time?"

She then turned towards Qianbei Ye. Her eyes widened in shock when she laid eyes upon Qianbei Ye's peerless features.

This man's looks could surpass the Young Master of Wind Valley, Feng Yuqing!

I never thought that Gu Nianye would be so fortunate and be able to cling to such a great quality product.

To this day, Elder Mei still believes that Gu Ruoyun's name was Gu Nianye. If she knows who Gu Ruoyun really was, she probably would not have the audacity to say such a thing even if she had a hundred doses of liquid courage.

Especially after the great fuss which had happened in Wind Valley. Who in the First City would not have heard about Grand Lord Hong Lian, his wife and their daughter, Gu Ruoyun?

# Chapter 1279: Early-Stage Exceptional State (6)

---

"Junior Sister, didn't you say that the Nine Underworld Flames were here? Let's go search for the Nine Underworld Flames first, we don't need to worry about these people." said the woman in white next to Elder Mei in a calm voice. She did not spare the couple a second glance.

"Yes, Senior Sister."

Elder Mei scoffed when she heard this before turning away and replying respectfully.

However, she was dumbstruck when she entered the cave. The cave was completely empty, how could anyone have seen any trace of the Nine Underworld Flames?

"Where are the Nine Underworld Flames? I can't be wrong, I had clearly seen the Nine Underworld Flames over here. Why has it disappeared?" Elder Mei shook his head fiercely. Her expression was particularly unsightly as she muttered to herself.

The white-robed woman whom she had addressed as Senior Sister raised her willowy brows and slowly approached Elder Mei, "What happened?"

"Senior Sister," Elder Mei bit her lip, "Someone's taken the Nine Underworld Flames!"

That was right, someone must have taken it away!

She had clearly seen the Nine Underworld Flames here, it could not have disappeared on its own.

"It must be the two of you!"

Suddenly, Elder Mei came to a realization and turned towards Gu Ruoyun. "Speak, did you take the Nine Underworld Flames?" questioned Elder Mei furiously.



Gu Ruoyun stared at her calmly before she turned away and said to the man next to her, "Xiao Ye, let's go."

"You want to leave?"

Elder Mei laughed icily and pulled her sword out resolutely, pointing it at Gu Ruoyun's back.

"You've taken the Nine Underworld Flames and you plan on leaving this place? Nothing in this world is quite so simple."

Slam!

Elder Mei was making her way to Gu Ruoyun's side when the crimson-robed man next to her waved his hand calmly. A powerful energy immediately shot towards Elder Mei's chest. Before she could react, her body was flung into a stone wall.

P'tui!

Elder Mei's body crumpled to the ground and she spat out a mouthful of blood. She glared at Qianbei Ye with an ashen look on her face.

Qianbei Ye walked towards Elder Mei who was still lying on the ground. With a wave of his hand, he held her neck in a choking grasp as he swept his gloomy gaze across the mark on her body. "You're a member of the Charm Sect?"

"That's right." Elder Mei raised her neck and gritted her teeth. "I am an elder from the Charm Sect. If you know what's good for you, you'll let me go. Otherwise, the Charm Sect will never let you get away with it!"

Even though Yue Ling, the Charm Sect's Sect Master, was long dead, there were still many powerful cultivators in the sect. This was why Elder Mei had the courage to act so brazenly.

Thump!

Qianbei Ye raised Elder Mei's body up into the air before smashing her forcefully into the ground. This broke every bone in

Elder Mei's body. She grimaced in agony but could not say another word.

Qianbei Ye pulled a handkerchief out from nowhere, wiped his hand and threw the handkerchief onto the ground. He then laughed icily and said, "It seems that the world no longer requires the Charm Sect's existence."

Gu Ruoyun raised her brow and looked at Elder Mei with a forced smile.

She had forgotten about the Charm Sect's Elder Mei. She simply never expected her to jump out at her.

Qianbei Ye was right!

Even though the Charm Sect's Sect Master was dead, there were still many remaining evils and those evils must all be destroyed!

"My Lord!"

The white-robed woman's expression changed drastically. She then rushed to Qianbei Ye's side and spoke lightly, "My Junior Sister had not intended to offend you. Please forgive us. If you hold the Nine Underworld Flames in your hands, I won't be greedy! All I ask is that you spare my Junior Sister."

# Chapter 1280: Early-Stage Exceptional State (7)

---

She could sense that this man was very powerful.

Even if she and Elder Mei were to join forces, they might not be any match for him.

"Cough, cough!"

Elder Mei coughed and crawled to her feet. She then exclaimed with a bite of dissatisfaction, "Senior Sister!"

"Shut your mouth!"

The white-robed woman glared at Elder Mei. It's all this woman's fault for stirring up trouble. Otherwise, this would never have happened!

"My Lord, I will go back and punish her for her mistake so please have mercy!" She said as she turned towards Qianbei Ye with a pleading look on her face. She did not dare to have any other intentions.

"Mercy?"

Qianbei Ye laughed icily, "She had tried to attack my wife. Why should I show her any mercy?"

Wife?

Elder Mei stared at Gu Ruoyun in shock. Her eyes flickered as she cried out, "Let me advise you, don't be deceived by this woman. She had previously tried to win the Young Master of Wind Valley's favor for the sake of power. They both admitted to it themselves! Can you really accept this promiscuous woman?"

Slice!

A ray of crimson light flashed towards Elder Mei. She did not even have the time to close her mouth before her tongue was cut

off. She widened her eyes in shock as her mouth continued to cry out wordlessly.

"This is the consequence of humiliating my wife!"

Qianbei Ye turned away scornfully and did not spare Elder Mei a second glance.

However, he noticed Elder Mei's tongue on the ground and wrinkled his brows angrily. With a wave of his large hand, flames rose immediately from the ground and burned the tongue into ashes...

"Argh, argh, argh!"

Elder Mei covered her blood-soaked mouth as tears rolled down her face in agony. She glared at Qianbei Ye's peerless features with eyes full of hatred like poisonous daggers. It was a ghastly sight.

"My Lord, aren't you overreacting?"

The white-robed Senior Sister's expression turned chilly. She then spoke in an icy cold voice, "I've already apologized to you so why did you continue to hurt my Junior Sister? Do you really place no importance on the Charm Sect?"

"She had the audacity to insult my wife so I'll make it such that she can never speak again."

Qianbei Ye's demonic red eyes were full of gloom and his voice held a deeply sinister tone.

"You..." The white-robed Senior Sister was furious but she forced her rage down in the end. She then gritted her teeth and spat, "Junior Sister, let's go!"

Boom!

Just as the both of them reached the mouth of the cave, a powerful energy suddenly flew towards them from behind. The white-robed woman quickly turned around but did not have the time to block the attack. The attack struck her and a bloody gash

appeared on her chest while a small trickle of blood flowed down from the corner of her lips.

"What do you want?"

The white-robed Senior Sister was finally enraged. This fellow is just taking advantage, we're already leaving yet he refuses to let us go.

"I never said that you could leave. Who gave you the permission to leave this place?"

Qianbei Ye stared calmly at the white-robed Senior Sister as he slowly walked towards the two women. "Since you've come all the way here, there's no way you'll be leaving this place. You shall stay here for all eternity."

The white-robed Senior Sister's eyes widened in horror as her body trembled.

"I admit that you are very powerful. The Charm Sect is not all that inferior either. If you do anything to us, the Charm Sect will never let you get away with it."

Her tone of voice then softened as she pleaded, "Please let us go. I guarantee that I won't bear any grudge against you nor will I allow the Charm Sect members to cause you any trouble! This is a far better deal than killing us."

# Chapter 1281: Early-Stage Exceptional State

## (8)

---

However, as soon as she had spoken, a red beam of light shot towards her face. Terrified, she tried to evade it but it was too late...

Slash!

At the critical moment, she raised her arm to block the attack. There was a slicing noise and her entire arm fell off.

"Ah!"

"Argh, argh, argh!"

The white-robed Senior Sister screamed in pain. Her shrieks were so heart-wrenching that Elder Mei, who was next to her, paused her anguished wailing and stared at her in shock.

The look in Elder Mei's eyes has changed from hatred to fear. At that moment, there was nothing else in her head but to turn around and run out of the cave.

The unfortunate white-robed Senior Sister had offended Qianbei Ye for Elder Mei's sake yet all she cared about her own skin and she did not even bother to turn back to look at her...

However, before Elder Mei could run out of the cave, a cold air erupted from behind her and pierced through her entire back.

Her body stiffened before she turned around dazedly towards Qianbei Ye's gloomy expression. Her body then slowly tilted towards the ground, crumpling onto the dirt with a thud.

"Junior Sister!"

The white-robed Senior Sister's face drained of color. She covered the bleeding stump of her arm, took a deep breath, and said, "My Junior Sister is dead and I've also lost an arm. Isn't this

enough to quell your anger? Won't you let me leave?"

"I'll give you a chance. End your own life. If I do it, I'm afraid that I won't let you die so easily."

Qianbei Ye looked at the white-robed Senior Sister as he calmly replied.

"You..." The white-robed Senior Sister's entire body trembled.

Junior Sister had only humiliated this woman and as a result, he had committed such a horrible murder. A man like this is a demon!

However, she understood that no matter what, Qianbei Ye was never going to allow her to leave.

She gently closed her eyes before opening them again after a long pause. A bitter smile was hanging on her face.

"If I end my own life, will you bury my Junior Sister and I so that we may rest in peace?"

Even to this very moment, the white-robed Senior Sister was thinking of Elder Mei's well-being.

It was unfortunate that Elder Mei never cared about her...

"You have no right to negotiate with me."

Qianbei Ye replied in a sinister voice which made the white-robed Senior Sister's heart tremble.

"Alright, I will end my own life. However, believe me when I say that if the Charm Sect was to find out about everything you've done today, they will never let you get away with it!"

After she spoke, she raised her hand and gathered a dense amount of spiritual energy into the palm of her hand. She then slammed it forcefully on the top of her skull.

Thump!

There was a muffled noise and fresh blood began to trickle down her forehead. The white-robed Senior Sister trembled before her

body slowly collapsed onto the ground...

"Yun'er, let's go."

Qianbei Ye did not bother to look at the bodies of the two women at all. He slowly walked towards Gu Ruoyun's side and raised his hand to pull her into his arms. He then smiled and said, "There's no need for you to dirty your hands over these people. I can handle them for you."

Since those who had found out that the Nine Underworld Flames had fallen into their hands, there was no way he would ever let them leave.

Otherwise, if they spread this news, Gu Ruoyun would never have a moment's peace from then on...

After all, the lure of the Nine Underworld Flames was far too great for the public...

"Alright."

Gu Ruoyun gently nodded before she stepped over the two corpses and walked through the cave...

"Yun'er."

Qianbei Ye held her hand as he turned towards her. His enchanting red eyes were glowing with a tender light, "I've decided that I won't hide anything from you so I'm going to take you to the organizations I've gathered in the First City. After that, I will tell you everything about us."



# Chapter 1282: Early-Stage Exceptional State

## (9)

---

Gu Ruoyun was shaken, has Qianbei Ye has finally come around?

He would no longer shoulder everything on his own? Instead, he would face it with her?

However, this was a good thing, was it not?

"Xiao Ye." Gu Ruoyun raised her head as she stared into Qianbei Ye's face and spoke seriously, "I've never intended to become the woman in the background for you. I've never wanted to rely on your protection for every single thing! I only want to walk beside you and share the mountains and the rivers with you! So, no matter the dangers you're about to face in the road ahead, I don't want you to shoulder everything just because you have to protect me! You are my husband-to-be so we must face these dangers together! Besides, only when you tell me the scale of the dangers can I grow even faster."

Qianbei Ye reached out and pulled Gu Ruoyun into his arms. He stroked her fine hair with his fingers and replied with a tender look on his face, "I understand. I'm sorry, Yun'er, I shouldn't have kept secrets from you. I've finally realized this and I will tell you everything! However, before that happens, I will give all the organizations in my hands to you! Besides, it's time for that place to have a female Master."

After this, he placed his arm around Gu Ruoyun's waist and disappeared from the valley outside the cave in a flash...

...

In a simple and dignified ancient palace, an incomparably handsome man with silver hair and crimson robes was sitting upright on a dragon's chair. His bloodthirsty and distant eyes were staring down at the crowd beneath him. A lucid and elegant-

looking woman was seated next to him. Others could not help but guess at who this girl could be.

"Reporting to you, Master!"

Despite the crowd's guesses, they did not dare to look at these two people for too long. They immediately bowed and greeted them with reverence.

"Xiao Ye, when had you established this organization in the First City?" Gu Ruoyun raised her brow as she turned towards Qianbei Ye and asked with a forced smile.

Qianbei Ye chuckled. His smile was magnificent and matchless, absolutely beautiful and moving.

"I had established this after I had arrived in the First City for the first time. However, I did not tell you about this at the time because their powers were insufficient! I had wanted to wait until they had gained more power before telling you but I was moved by our conversation last night so I decided to bring you here."

At this moment, Qianbei Ye's face was filled with smiles and there was a tenderness in his eyes which no one had ever seen before. This shocked the crowd beneath him as they stared in astonishment at the man's smiling face.

Master actually smiles?

Are we hallucinating?

Our Master, who always had a dark and gloomy look on his face, actually has the ability to smile?

They never expected their Master to have such a beautiful smile. It was likely that any woman would be deeply drawn by his smile...

"Yun'er." Qianbei Ye raised the corner of his lips as his enchanting red eyes swept across every face in the crowd beneath him. "At the time, I had built this organization for you! Since I've prepared these people for you, I had not given this organization a

name. Why don't you name it? What do you think?

Gu Ruoyun fell silent for a moment before saying, "How about we call this the 'Devil Sect' again? Is that alright?"

"Alright. Whatever you say goes."

Qianbei Ye was looking at Gu Ruoyun with eyes filled with deep emotion and gentleness. "From now on, I'll hand them over to your disposal."

The crowd beneath him went into shock.

They never expected Qianbei Ye to hand them over just like that, and to a woman who was only at the early stage of the exceptional state?

# Chapter 1283: Early-Stage Exceptional State (10)

---

"Master, I refuse to accept this!"

A man dressed in purple robes stepped out from the crowd. He then joined his fist and exclaimed, "In the past, we had decided to pledge our loyalty to you, Master, and not to anyone else. Besides, her powers are far too weak. She's an entire rank below me. I don't want to serve her."

The purple-robed man's face was particularly pale as he spoke. A thin layer of sweat trickled from his forehead as he glanced carefully over at Qianbei Ye.

Even though he was deeply afraid of Qianbei Ye, he had to speak out. Otherwise, they would have to listen to a woman's orders from now on.

How could an egotistical man like him endure this?

Qianbei Ye's expression turned cold as a vicious aura began to encircle his entire body while a red, bloodthirsty light filled his demonic eyes.

"This organization was created just for her. If she should ever find no need for it, there's no use in having any of you around."

The purple-robed man's body shook as his face filled with shock.

This organization was prepared just for her so if she can't use it, there's no use in having them around?

Perhaps only Qianbei Ye could say such a thing in this entire world.

He would even throw such a powerful organization away without batting an eye...

"Xiao Ye." Gu Ruoyun squeezed Qianbei Ye's hand before she

slowly rose to her feet. She then curled her lips into a smile and said, "Don't you remember what I've told you? I don't need your protection. I want to be the woman who stands by your side so let me handle this on my own."

Qianbei Ye, who was about to react, put his hand down when he heard Gu Ruoyun's reminder. He sat quietly on his chair but his red eyes continued to follow the woman with a smirk on his lips.

His woman was always the most outstanding of them all!

Therefore, when it comes to Gu Ruoyun, Qianbei Ye had absolute confidence in her abilities!

The purple-robed man laughed icily as he faced Gu Ruoyun without a hint of fear, "I will serve you if you can defeat me!"

"Defeat you?" Gu Ruoyun raised her brow. "Are you sure?"

"That's right!"

The purple-robed man's face was cold and aloof. "As long as you can defeat me, I will serve you willingly."

"Alright, remember your promise."

Gu Ruoyun eyed the purple-robed man and smirked. "I'll give you three strikes."

This was a great insult to the purple-robed man. He immediately charged towards her in a rage and raised his fist, throwing it forcefully towards her head.

To the purple-robed man's point of view, he was already fast enough. Based on Gu Ruoyun's current abilities, she would not be able to avoid him at all.

However, he soon realized that he was wrong. Just as his fist was about to land on Gu Ruoyun, the woman leaned slightly to the side and managed to move less than one millimeter away. His fist passed harmlessly through the air.

"I never thought that you would have two more chances. I'm

afraid that you won't be able to avoid me the second time!"

The purple-robed man smiled scornfully as he put his palms together.

"Shadowless Hand!" he cried out.

Boom!

A transparent hand smashed down from the sky towards Gu Ruoyun.

However, due to Gu Ruoyun's relationship with Qianbei Ye, the purple-robed man did not utilize the full force of his power. Instead, he had only used half! He was afraid that he would accidentally kill Gu Ruoyun with one slap!

Thump!

The hand landed forcefully onto the ground, causing the entire palace to shake. Smoke and dust filled the air which made the others cough incessantly.

# Chapter 1284: Early-Stage Exceptional State

## (11)

---

When the smoke cleared, a deep chasm had appeared where Gu Ruoyun once was. As for the green-robed woman, she seems to have disappeared without a trace.

Cold sweat began to form on the purple-robed man's forehead as his eyes filled with anxiety.

"How can this be?"

He mumbled to himself ceaselessly. Unless my hit was so powerful that there's nothing left of her? Was she really that weak? This is bad! If she really ends up dead by my hand, Master will never let me get away with it!

The more the purple-robed man thought about this, the more terrified he felt. After all, he had only used half of his full power. Based on Gu Ruoyun's level of power, she should not have been completely pulverized without even a trace of her bones remaining.

"Three strikes. You have one more left."

Suddenly, a clear and cold voice chimed in from behind him. His back stiffened as he turned around in disbelief and stared at the woman's delicate and pretty features with an astonished look in his eyes. His face then turned completely pale.

"Where did you go?"

This is impossible!

She can't possibly be that fast to have disappeared before I even noticed her move.

"I'm not obliged to answer your question." Gu Ruoyun looked at the purple-robed man before she paused and said, "Besides, you still have one strike left. Have you thought about how you'd like to

deal with me? Once this strike is over, it'll be my turn."

The purple-robed man still has intentions of being merciful to Gu Ruoyun but when he heard what she said, he was instantly enraged. He then joined his palms together once again and cried out, "Shadowless Hand!"

This time, he did not give any leeway and used all of his power.

Thump!

A transparent hand descended from the sky once again, smashing towards Gu Ruoyun on the ground.

This time, everyone could not help but look at each other. They then stared at the smoke and dust-filled ground without blinking at all.

"Is she or is she not there!"

When the smoke cleared, the purple-robed man was shocked at the sight of the empty ground. He then sensed an aura coming from behind him. His body stiffened and he turned around with an ugly look on his face, staring at the green-robed woman.

"How can this be? How did you manage to evade my attacks?"

"Do you want to know how?" Gu Ruoyun smiled calmly. "Unfortunately, I don't want to tell you! Since you've used up all three strikes, it's my turn to attack!"

The purple-robed man's face was ashen as he glared angrily at Gu Ruoyun.

Based on his point of view, even if this woman's speed was a little bit faster, she could forget about hurting him!

After all, based on their ranks, he was already at the mid-stage of the exceptional state while she was a cultivator who had just broken through to the exceptional state. She could not possibly hurt him.

"Hmph!"



He scoffed and replied icily, "I may not know what kind of blasphemy you've used to evade my attacks but if you want to defeat me, you should stop indulging in fantasies. I'm not that weak!"

Gu Ruoyun raised her brow and did not reply to his statement. Instead, she reached her hand out.

A tiny cluster of black flames appeared on the palm of her hand, burning with great effort.

"Haha, you can't be thinking of defeating me with this thing? Are you sure that it can manifest its power? I can extinguish this flame with a single breath!"

His voice was full of disdain as he spoke with contempt.

# Chapter 1285: Early-Stage Exceptional State

## (12)

---

The Nine Underworld Flames seemed to understand the purple-robed man's words as the flames shot instantly towards the sky before charging towards him.

The purple-robed man's face was disdainful as he watched the Nine Underworld Flames charge towards him. He straightened his sleeves in a nonchalant manner, ready to swat the little cluster of flames away.

However, his contemptuous face soon stiffened.

As the small cluster of flames approached him, it suddenly began to emit a powerful force. A small crack had also suddenly appeared in the small flame, making it look like a troll which was smiling creepily as it opened its mouth...

The purple-robed man's eyes were shocked. Before he could react, the cluster of black flames had slammed forcefully into his chest.

At that moment, he felt as if an incomparably hard fist had landed on his chest. His body was forcefully pushed out of the way and he landed in the middle of the crowd with a loud crash. The black flames began to sear his chest.

"Argh!"

"Argh, argh, argh!"

The purple-robed man rolled around in agony until the ground was alight with the black flames.

Everyone in the palace was shocked. That cluster of flames had looked so weak and tiny, how could it possibly emit such great power?

This... This simply was not logical!

"Xiao You, return."

Gu Ruoyun calmly summoned.

The Nine Underworld Flames left the purple-robed man's body and flew swiftly back to Gu Ruoyun's palm.

Now, the purple-robed man looked very shabby indeed in his torn and tattered clothes which were scorched by the Nine Underworld Flames. His once inky-black hair was now disheveled as he lay on the ground, gasping for breath.

There was a constant look of fear in his eyes.

"Are you willing to serve me now?"

Gu Ruoyun raised her eyes as she stared at the purple-robed man icily.

"I will."

How could he possibly have the courage to defy Gu Ruoyun now?

Those flames were too horrifying, he did not want to ever encounter them again in this lifetime...

"Does anyone else have any further objections?" Gu Ruoyun swept her gaze across the rest of the people in the palace. "If you're unhappy, you can step out and challenge me now. Don't blame me for never offering you this opportunity!"

A few members amongst the crowd looked at each other before stepping out.

"Out of all of us, Zi Yun's power is not considered to be very strong. Instead, he is more on the weaker side. Defeating him doesn't count for much so we stand with our refusal to serve you."

Gu Ruoyun stroked her chin before she smiled and nodded. "In that case, I'll give you all the chance to challenge me. However, this time, I'll no longer allow you three strikes! Furthermore, you can all attack in unison. I don't have the time to compete with you all one by one."

The crowd's faces filled with rage when they heard Gu Ruoyun's provocation. They immediately drew their weapons and charged towards Gu Ruoyun.

"Since you've allowed us all to come at you together, why shouldn't we do as you wish? However, don't you regret it!"

These people were all at the late stage of the exceptional state.

They were two levels of power above Gu Ruoyun. Hence, in their hearts, they had already determined the latter's fate.

Despite the strange flames in her grasp, she could never be able to hurt them all!

After all, they were not Zi Yun! They would never have been lenient with her!

"Looks like all of you do plan to attack me together. This way, I'll save quite a bit of time."

Gu Ruoyun smiled calmly before she slowly raised her hand...

# Chapter 1286: Early-Stage Exceptional State (13)

---

The group of attackers was dazed, unsure of what Gu Ruoyun was up to.

However, that does not mean that they were going to stop their attack. Instead, they charged even more ferociously towards Gu Ruoyun.

Boom!

A purple pagoda descended from the sky, landing with a crash. Before they could react, they were all smashed directly by the Ancient Divine Pagoda, not a single person was spared...

"Anyone else wants to try?"

Gu Ruoyun raised her brow and turned towards the others in the palace.

The entire palace fell silent and not a single sound could be heard. It was so quiet that one could clearly hear the sound of the person next to them breathing.

Zi Yin shivered violently. If Gu Ruoyun had used this pagoda against him, he would probably have been crushed to smithereens without even leaving a whole corpse.

"It's alright, anyone who wants to challenge me can step forward. I'll accept anyone." Gu Ruoyun curled her lips as she spoke with a rigid smile.

Silence...

The palace was so quiet that they could hear a pin drop.

Those who had been frightened by Gu Ruoyun could not help but retreat. They were terrified that she would direct this pagoda to squash them next!

"What?" Gu Ruoyun's smile grew even more pronounced as she turned towards the crowd. "No one wants to take up the challenge? Don't say that I never gave you the chance!"

As she spoke, she turned her gaze towards Zi Yun once again and calmly asked, "Don't you want to fight me again?"

"No."

Zi Yun gulped, he was clearly so frightened by Gu Ruoyun's tactics that everything was in a blur.

Usually, during a fight, the opponent would let out a loud cry when delivering the finishing blow in order to increase the power of their own attack and to caution the other person of the move they were about to deliver. However, this woman was really terrifying simply by raising her hand and slamming a pagoda down. She had not given anyone the chance to react before flattening them immediately.

"Does anyone have any objections in regards to me accepting this organization?"

Gu Ruoyun swept her gaze around the crowd once again as she repeated her question.

"N-No..."

How could they dare to raise any objections?

Even if they did, raising those objections means that they would be the next ones to be crushed by pagoda!

"Alright, since no one has any other objections, you will all become members of the Devil Sect from now on!"

Gu Ruoyun waved her hand and put the Ancient Divine Pagoda away.

When the Ancient Divine Pagoda was lifted, those who had been crushed by it could finally exhale. However, the force of it resulted in rather serious injuries for them. Even though no one was killed,

they had all suffered broken bones.

"From now on, I am no longer your Master." Qianbei Ye slowly rose to his feet, walked towards Gu Ruoyun's side and pulled her into his arms. He then swept his gloomy gaze across the crowd in the palace before saying, "She is your Master!"

The crowd looked at one another and knelt down in unison. "Greetings Master, your subordinates await your orders, Master!" they declared reverently.

"Yun'er," Qianbei Ye stroked Gu Ruoyun's hair and his eyes were filled with joy. "These people shall belong to you from now on! Don't judge them just because their powers aren't strong enough yet although they are pretty talented. I've only nurtured them for a short while and they've already broken through to this state."

"Xiao Ye."

Gu Ruoyun held Qianbei Ye's hand and turned towards him, "You've done too much for me, I don't think I can ever repay you."

"Silly girl." Qianbei Ye held her even tighter. The smile on his peerless face was filled with emotion as he replied, "Your ability to accept me is the biggest repayment of all. Besides, even if you can't repay me, I will stay by your side to watch over, protect, and help you always."

# Chapter 1287: Early-Stage Exceptional State (14)

---

Gu Ruoyun's heart trembled as a warm current washed over her.

What had she done to deserve such a man by her side in this lifetime?

The crowd in the palace looked at each other and could not help but feel shocked at Qianbei Ye's sudden change.

They had been following him for some time now yet they've never seen such a gentle side to him! After all, this man was so powerful that he would certainly be able to lure some lascivious women. However, any women who approached him would suffer very bad consequences!

Hence, they had all nearly assumed that this fellow had a preference for men which was why he hated women so much.

However, they never thought that he could ever be so tender to a woman...

Qianbei Ye furrowed his brows when he sensed their eyes on Gu Ruoyun and himself. His dark and gloomy gaze then glared at every single person in the vicinity.

When the crowd noticed his glare, they quickly lowered their heads and did not dare to look at the two of them anymore...

"Yun'er, it's getting late, let's go get some rest."

Qianbei Ye held onto Gu Ruoyun's body before they quickly disappeared from the palace.

When Gu Ruoyun returned to her senses, she was next to a gorgeous and exquisite bed. The man carefully placed her on the bed and before Gu Ruoyun could react, planted a kiss on her soft lips. His red eyes were filled with tenderness.



"Xiao Ye..."

Gu Ruoyun gently called out his name, her eyes gradually filling with emotion.

"Damn it!"

Qianbei Ye could feel his body react. He cursed in the dark and pulled Gu Ruoyun into his arms before placing her on his lap and kissing her again. His movements were ever so careful as if he was afraid of hurting her...

If it were not for my promise to father-in-law, I would have devoured her whole.

"Yun'er." After a long pause, Qianbei Ye released the woman in his arms and laughed bitterly, "Looks like we should return to the West Spirit Mainland and bring my brother-in-law over here. Only when your family is reunited will father-in-law allow us to be married."

Gu Ruoyun was shocked. She then shook her head and replied, "Xiao Ye, my big brother isn't in West Spirit Mainland anymore."

"What did you say?"

Qianbei Ye's eyes sharpened immediately, "Gu Shengxiao isn't in the West Spirit Mainland?"

"That's right," Gu Ruoyun calmly replied. "Previously, when I ran into danger at the ruins, a black-robed man had appeared and saved me. I could sense that he was really Gu Shengxiao but I don't know why he refused to acknowledge me."

Gu Ruoyun could not understand why that had happened. Why had Gu Shengxiao refused to acknowledge her?

Therefore, she wants to find him again and question him!

Qianbei Ye fell silent and was deep in thought. After a long pause, he sighed and squeezed her body.

"Yun'er, leave this to me!"

"Xiao Ye?"

Gu Ruoyun stared at Qianbei Ye in shock as she asked, "What are you planning to do?"

"I'm going to find Gu Shengxiao. I want you to stay here and wait for me."

"Xiao Ye, I'm coming with you."

Qianbei Ye shook his head. "You should stay here. Besides, we need to expand the Devil Sect's power and we don't have much time left. You will need to nurture them completely. Leave Gu Shengxiao to me. When I return again, I'll bring Gu Shengxiao back to you!"

His eyes were filled with determination and his look deeply moved Gu Ruoyun's heart.

# Chapter 1288: Exceptional State, Early Stage (15)

---

"Alright."

In the end, she agreed to his condition.

"I'll wait for you right here! Whether you can find Big Brother or not, you must come back to me."

Gu Ruoyun knows that Qianbei Ye was speaking the truth.

The Devil Sect's power needs to be expanded. Besides, if she were to follow him, she would only be in the way...

"Don't worry, nothing will happen to me."

Qianbei Ye pulled Gu Ruoyun into his arms, lowered his head and kissed her on the lips. "Once I bring older brother-in-law back, I will make you my wife."

Gu Ruoyun's body shook. She then wrapped her arms around Qianbei Ye's neck and deepened the kiss...

It was a sleepless night.

The next day, after Gu Ruoyun had woken up, Qianbei Ye said goodbye to her and left the palace to search for Gu Shengxiao's whereabouts. Gu Ruoyun's expression sank as he left. Her eyes were filled with consideration.

"If my powers had been strong enough, I wouldn't ever drag him down. At this moment, I'm not powerful enough."

Though she had been achieving her breakthroughs rapidly, her enemies were becoming more powerful as well.

No matter how strong she was now, she would still come face-to-face with a greater enemy in the future.

"Perhaps only that peak position can allow me to ensure my loved ones' safety!"

Gu Ruoyun clenched her fists in a tight grip. Her heart made a decision and her eyes filled with determination along with an absolute faith.

"Oh, that's right, after breaking through to the exceptional state, I can unlock another door in the Ancient Divine Pagoda. I wonder what the Ancient Divine Pagoda will gift to me this time."

She thought for a moment before entering the Ancient Divine Pagoda without any further consideration.

"You're here?"

Zixie looked at Gu Ruoyun and his handsome face lit up with a demonic smile. "The sixth level of the Ancient Divine Pagoda has been unlocked. You can go in now."

"Alright."

Gu Ruoyun gently nodded and walked towards the now unlocked door to the Ancient Divine Pagoda's sixth level.

Everything was empty at the doorway.

As Gu Ruoyun entered the great doorway, a loud crash sounded and a powerful energy entered into her mind's eye, nearly bursting her brain into pieces.

When she returned to her senses, she realized that she had entered a savage territory...

"What is this place?"

Gu Ruoyun furrowed her brows and a sense of astonishment flashed in her eyes.

Usually, the Ancient Divine Pagoda would grant me something to increase my power. Why did it send me to such a strange place this time. ..

Just as Gu Ruoyun was in the middle of her confusion, a cold and clear voice chimed in from not too far away which made her turn around.

"Qianbei Ye, why have you asked me to come to a place like this?"

Qianbei Ye?

Boom!

The name hammered against her heart and made it shiver...

It was an extremely hot day.

Under the dazzling sky, the man's silvery hair looked absolutely stunning while his crimson robes were enchanting, magnificent, and matchless.

This man was like a god and a demon at the same time. These two auras blended with one another on his body. This time, there was no emotion on his face as he glared coldly at the woman in white before him...

Gu Ruoyun did not know why but she felt a strange sense of familiarity when her eyes landed on the woman in white. The feeling surged towards her like an attack separated by more than ten thousand years.

"I remember now." A ray of divine light flashed across Gu Ruoyun's mind. "The memory I had seen in the sea of flames back then was of a white-robed woman forging the Nine Emperors. If my guess is correct, this woman was the one who had created the Nine Emperors."

# Chapter 1289: Early-Stage Exceptional State (16)

---

Besides, just before that memory had faded out, she had clearly seen a figure in red's appearance.

Could it be that the figure in red was Qianbei Ye?

"What is this place then? Could it be another memory?" Gu Ruoyun pondered for a moment. "Why is the Ancient Divine Pagoda showing me this memory? And Qianbei Ye... Just who is he?"

Qianbei Ye's eyes carried an eerily cold chill under the sky. His magnificent features displayed a gloomy air.

"I heard that you've forged the Ancient Divine Pagoda?"

The Ancient Divine Pagoda?

Boom!

Gu Ruoyun's eyes filled with shock. Could it be that this woman had also created the Ancient Divine Pagoda?

Who on earth was she?

She even had the ability to forge the Ancient Divine Pagoda? Why is she showing me this?

"Qianbei Ye, you are my most admired rival throughout my entire life." The woman in white robes chuckled. Her smile was clear and cold as her eyes fixed upon Qianbei Ye. "If you had not done all of those things, perhaps we could have become friends! Unfortunately, you had always treated me as a rival! Could it be that you are like just everyone else, coveting my Ancient Divine Pagoda?"

Qianbei Ye's body released a dense murderous intent as his demonic red eyes glared at the woman in white before him.

"Hand over the Ancient Divine Pagoda!"

He slowly moved closer towards the white-robed woman. His peerless features were filled with an eerie chill.

"If you hand over the Ancient Divine Pagoda, I will spare you on account of our many years of camaraderie."

The white-robed woman chuckled softly but there was a sense of disappointment in her smile. Gu Ruoyun could clearly detect a wave of hurt from her as well.

That kind of pain was like a betrayal from a person she loves the most...

Gu Ruoyun does not know why but when she saw the pain in the white-robed woman's eyes, her heart throbbed forcefully as if this was happening to her as well.

"That's not right!"

Gu Ruoyun suddenly returned to her senses, shook her head and stared coldly at that peerless face.

"He's not Qianbei Ye!"

This man can't possibly be Qianbei Ye!

Then who on earth is he? Why does he look exactly like Qianbei Ye? Why does he want to take the Ancient Divine Pagoda away?

Rush!

Just as Gu Ruoyun was deep in thought, a white light flashed and the savage land disappeared. When she came to her senses, she was back in the Ancient Divine Pagoda again...

"Did you see that?"

Zixie's voice sounded from behind her, "That woman in white you just saw was my previous Master. Now you know why I had treated Qianbei Ye with animosity since the beginning! My previous Master had died by his hand."

Gu Ruoyun shook her head. "Zixie, you must be mistaken. That wasn't Xiao Ye, I know Xiao Ye so well and I could tell that it wasn't him!"

"Little girl." Zixie laughed bitterly. "It's useless even if you say these things because that man was clearly Qianbei Ye!"

"Even if that man was wearing Xiao Ye's face, that wasn't really him!" Gu Ruoyun laughed icily. "However, that woman sure was foolish. I could tell that she had feelings for Xiao Ye. She can't even acknowledge her beloved."

Zixie stared at Gu Ruoyun. He really wanted to speak up and tell her that the foolish woman was indeed her.

Nevertheless, he could not say anything in the end.

It would be better for her to realize some things on her own. If anyone else told her, it would only produce the opposite result...



# Chapter 1290: Early-Stage Exceptional State

## (17)

---

"Little girl, I know that you trust Qianbei Ye very much but I still hope that you can maintain your vigilance."

There was a cold light in Zixie's smile. "I had seen him kill my Master for the sake of the Ancient Divine Pagoda with my own eyes! That's why I don't trust him! Nor do I wish for you to follow the same disastrous road! He is not as simple as he seems."

"Zixie." Gu Ruoyun raised her head and stared at Zixie's handsome features. Her eyes were filled with determination. "I have never been one to listen to other's opinions! I will only experience it for myself! Xiao Ye has given me so much over these years and has never asked for any form of repayment. He has saved me from danger over and over again and had nearly lost his own life in the process. Why should I harbor any suspicions towards him? Even if that man who looks like him were to appear before me one day, I would still believe without any doubt that the person who wanted to kill me would never be Qianbei Ye!"

"I believe him like how he believes in me as well. You might even say that in this world, aside from you, he is the person that I trust the most!"

Her trust in Qianbei Ye comes from the deep recesses of her heart. She would trust him no matter what...

"Little girl, I hope that your judgement is right." Zixie smiled before he stroked Gu Ruoyun's head and sighed. "However, even if you're wrong, I will give my life this time to ensure your safety! If you really want to be with him, you can rest assured and just do that. I will handle everything for you behind the scenes."

"Zixie..."

Gu Ruoyun felt deeply moved as she stared at the man's

handsome face. "Thank you. To have you and Xiao Ye as my companions is enough for me."

One lover and one confidant. What more could she ask for?

Zixie smiled. to him, nothing was more important than her happiness...

"Aside from this memory, there is still one more thing in the sixth level."

Zixie looked at the black box in the room and smiled demonically. "Little girl, go ahead and open that box."

"Alright."

Gu Ruoyun slowly walked towards the box and gently unlocked it. Several few pill formulas appeared in her sight.

"These pill formulas are..."

Gu Ruoyun was shocked after looking through the content of the pill formulas. "The Exceptional Pill can raise a someone at the exceptional state to a level above? This is just what I need! Also... There's the Infinite Pill which can instantly raise a cultivator's power to the exceptional state instantly but with heavy consequences — one would never be able to progress ever again."

Gu Ruoyun gasped.

The Infinite Pill could instantly enable a cultivator to breakthrough to the exceptional state even though that means that the cultivator would never be able to achieve another breakthrough again.

Generally speaking, most of the Dongfang family members in the West Spirit Mainland have yet to reach the Martial Supreme rank. They would probably never be able to reach this state in the future. However, if they were to take this pill, they would be able to reach the exceptional state. Not only would they receive a great boost in their powers, their lifespan would also increase by several hundred

years as well.

"These pills are very useful." Gu Ruoyun put the pill formulas away. "With these, I can increase my power even more rapidly!"

After that, Gu Ruoyun no longer remained in the Ancient Divine Pagoda and quickly left the place...

# Chapter 1291: Early-Stage Exceptional State (18)

---

Everyone was gathered in the palace hall and were looking at each other, clearly unsure why Gu Ruoyun had gathered them all here.

"Is everyone here?"

The crowd watched as Gu Ruoyun slowly made her way to the dragon chair and stepped down. She then gently raised her brow and swept her gaze through the crowd. "Since everyone is here, I'll make my announcement!"

The crowd looked at each other, uncertain of what Gu Ruoyun was keeping in suspense.

"Zi Yun, come out."

Gu Ruoyun looked at the purple-robed man in the crowd and calmly summoned him.

Zi Yun's entire body trembled when he heard Gu Ruoyun's voice and he stepped out in a fidgety manner, carefully eyeing Gu Ruoyun. "Master, what are your orders?"

This woman can't be planning to make me pay for yesterday's challenge?

Women have always been petty, it looks like it's all over for me this time!

"Zi Yun, take this pill."

Gu Ruoyun waved her hand and a pill floated towards Zi Yun.

Zi Yun accepted the pill and stared at Gu Ruoyun's delicate features in astonishment, feeling very fidgety.

A pill?

Zi Yun's mouth twitched, unable to believe in Gu Ruoyun's

words. Based on his point of view, this was not very different from a poison pill...

"Take it!"

Gu Ruoyun raised her brows and ordered.

Zi Yun reached out his trembling hand and placed the pill in his mouth before closing his eyes immediately. He acted as if he was looking at death in the face.

Everyone else could not bear to look at him. From their point of view, women were all petty beings. Zi Yun had provoked her yesterday so she must now be subjecting them to a slow torture after accepting them.

To them, the outcome of getting Zi Yun to take the pill was obvious.

He was definitely going to die!

They were already imagining Zi Yun with blood oozing from his eyes, nose, and mouth as they started to blame Gu Ruoyun in their hearts. After all, Zi Yun had been with them for quite a while so they would certainly share some feelings. This woman had come in and pointed a knife at him, this was simply too cruel!

Boom!

Just as the crowd began to feel reluctant to watch, a hurricane rose from within Zi Yun's body which made them quake. They all turned to watch with surprise.

This... Isn't this power generated from a breakthrough?

What on earth is going on?

Is Zi Yun having a breakthrough after swallowing that pill?

Could it be that he's breaking through his bottleneck before dying?

Zi Yun was shocked as well and his eyes stared dazedly at Gu

Ruoyun. After a long pause, he returned to his senses and knelt before Gu Ruoyun.

"Thank you, Master, for granting me this pill. If it had not been for this pill, I'm afraid that I would never have reached the late stage of the exceptional state so quickly."

He has reached the late-stage exceptional state.

Even though it was only a step away from a mid-stage exceptional state, the distance between the two stages was vast.

Yet Gu Ruoyun had let bygones be bygones and used a pill to help him achieve his breakthrough.

He would never forget this great kindness of hers!

Zi Yun features were filled with excitement and he remembered his misunderstanding towards Gu Ruoyun. A wave of guilt appeared in his eyes...

Slam!

Zi Yun's words were like a thunderbolt from a clear sky, crashing down immediately and striking everyone senseless!

What did Zi Yun just say? Gu Ruoyun had not given him a poison pill but it was a pill which could help him in his breakthrough? Yet so many of us have all misunderstood her?

"Consider this Exceptional Pill as my gift to all of you for making my acquaintance. After this, every one of you may come here and collect one pill from me. Those in the early stage of the exceptional state will be able to break through to the mid-stage upon consuming this pill while those in the mid-stage will breakthrough to late-stage. However, if you consume this pill again after reaching the late stage, even if you are unable to reach the refined state, you will still be on the verge of a breakthrough. I will use another Spirit Gathering Pill to help you in your breakthrough!"

# Chapter 1292: Early-Stage Exceptional State (19)

---

The crowd shocked. Everyone was looking at Gu Ruoyun excitedly, unable to believe their ears.

"Master, are you saying that all of us can take one of these pills?"

One should know that this was more than just a regular pill.

It was a pill which could aid a cultivator in the exceptional state to achieve a breakthrough. Even the Great Protectors did not have that kind of power...

"That's right." Gu Ruoyun smiled calmly. "As long as you serve me with loyalty, you will never lack a source for pills. However, if I ever find out that you have any intentions of betrayal, I will ensure that you will suffer a fate worse than death! Trust me, I'm a pill master and at the same time a poison master too. There are a million ways to grant you a fate worse than death."

The crowd could not help but shiver upon hearing her words. They then knelt in unison.

"Don't worry, Master, we will always remain loyal to you and we will never betray you! If any of us have any intentions to betray you, may we be struck by lightning and die without a whole corpse!"

"You may rise."

Gu Ruoyun waved her hand and replied serenely. "You may collect the pills from the Vermillion Bird after this. You may only have one each. Taking an extra pill would not produce any extra effect!"

The Vermillion Bird?

The crowd looked at each other, unsure of who Gu Ruoyun was talking about.

However, while they were in the midst of their confusion, they noticed an adorable figure next to the woman.

It was a tender, cherub-cheeked little lolita. Her fiery-red eyes looked particularly beautiful while her fair face carried an innocent little smile. She grinned at the crowd before her and said, "Remember to collect the pills from me later."

The crowd was absolutely drawn to the little lolita's cute features, completely ignoring the fact that she had appeared out of thin air...

"Master."

Just then, a figure rushed into the room and knelt before Gu Ruoyun. "Reporting to the Master, the Ghost Order's Master has requested for an audience," he exclaimed.

The Ghost Order?

Gu Ruoyun was shaken, "What kind of a person is the Ghost Order's Master?"

"Reporting to the Master." Zi Yun looked at Gu Ruoyun and said, "Ever since Lord Qianbei had subdued us, neighboring organizations have received word of his existence. The Ghost Order is considered to be at the peak of existence amongst the forces in the second-tier ranks. The Ghost Order's Master is already at the late-stage of the refined state and anyone who has crossed the members of the Ghost Order would enter the gates of hell. Hence, the Ghost Order has that reputation! However..."

At that point, Zi Yun's tone became more cautious, "The Ghost Order's Master seems to be very interested in Lord Qianbei and had asked for an audience many times. However, Lord Qianbei has never met her and has always kept the members of the Ghost Order outside the gates."

Gu Ruoyun thought for a moment before she calmly replied, "Let her in."



"Yes, Master."

After receiving her orders, the man joined his fists and took his leave.

"Master, this Chu Luo, the Order Master of the Ghost Order, has great power. Now that Lord Qianbei isn't here, I think it's best that we do not see her. Otherwise, if she causes trouble for you..." Zi Yun was at a loss. After all, the only one who could defeat Chu Luo was Lord Qianbei.

No matter how powerful their Master was, she was no match for Chu Luo!

"Have no fear." Gu Ruoyun laughed and rose to her feet. "I'd love to see who's been trying to see my man."

Once she had said that, she did not give anyone the opportunity to advise her and walked out the door...

"Come, we must hurry and protect our Master," Zi Yun said as he sighed in exasperation and waved his hand.

# Chapter 1293: Early-Stage Exceptional State (20)

---

A black-robed woman was seated at a table in a simple and unadorned drawing room. Her eyes continuously darted towards the door and there was a sense of anticipation on her face. However, a clear sense of disappointment flashed in her eyes when she noticed Gu Ruoyun walking into the room.

That's not him!

However, the more that fellow refuses to see me, the more curious I am about his identity!

"Chu Luo of the Ghost Order?"

Gu Ruoyun slowly entered the room as her clear and cold gaze turned towards the black-robed woman. She then calmly curled her lips. "I wonder what business do you have with the Devil Sect?"

There was an ugly look on Chu Luo's face now. "I'm here to see your Master, not you. I am the Order Master of the Ghost Order. I'm on the same rank as your Master yet they had sent a servant girl to greet me."

It was said that the Master of this palace does not have a wife. Therefore, the woman before her must clearly be a servant.

The hateful thing was, it would be fine if that fellow had refused to see her yet he had actually sent a servant girl. This was clearly an insult!

"Apologies but..." Gu Ruoyun smirked. "I'm the Master of this palace."

Smash!

Chu Luo's finger tensed up and she shattered the teacup in her hand. Her pretty eyes were wide with shock as she stared at Gu Ruoyun in disbelief.

"What did you say? You're the Master of this palace? That's impossible, I heard that the Master of this palace is a silver-haired man in red who is absolutely powerful. You are merely at the early stage of the exceptional state."

Gu Ruoyun looked at the teacup that Chu Luo had shattered and calmly replied, "The tea cups in my palace are very expensive. You've broken it so you shall have to compensate me with ten thousand gold pieces."

"What?"

Chu Luo nearly jumped. Shamed into anger, she cried out, "Are you trying to rob me?"

Ten thousand gold pieces.

This woman could even think of such a thing.

She owns a teacup which actually costs ten thousand gold pieces!

"Since you don't want to compensate me with money, Zi Yun, send our guest away!"

"Wait." Chu Luo was anxious now. She has yet to grasp the situation so how could she leave so soon?

She gritted her teeth at the thought and said, "It's just ten thousand gold pieces, isn't it? I'll give it to you. However, I don't have that much money on me at the moment. I'll have someone send it over to you later."

"No gold pieces? No problem. You can use an item of the same price in exchange." Gu Ruoyun swept her gaze towards Chu Luo and said with a fixed smile. "How about you give me that Blood Lotus in your arm, it's less valuable than ten thousand gold pieces."

Chu Luo nearly spat out a mouthful of blood.

In this woman's eyes, was this Blood Lotus only worth less than ten thousand gold pieces?

One should know that she had spent a million gold pieces to buy

this from a peddler!

And now this woman wants to exchange it for a shattered teacup?

"Miss, this is daylight robbery!" Chu Luo gritted her teeth hatefully. "No matter how expensive your teacup is, it's not as valuable as my Blood Lotus! I can give you ten thousand gold pieces but you can forget about this Blood Lotus."

"Really?" Gu Ruoyun raised her brow. "Zi Yun, send our guest away. From now on, members of the Ghost Order are not welcome here!"

"You..." Chu Luo trembled in anger.

However, she could not contain her curiosity and pulled the Blood Lotus out from her bosom before throwing it at Gu Ruoyun.

"I'll give it to you! It's only an item worth a million gold pieces! The Ghost Order has the money and I can just buy another one next time! However, I hope you don't end up being choked to death by this Blood Lotus! It's not good to take another's possession!"

# Chapter 1294: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order

## (1)

---

Gu Ruoyun smiled serenely as she picked up and kept the Blood Lotus, seemingly unaffected by the anger on Chu Luo's face.

"My teacups are very expensive. I think I've made a loss in exchanging this teacup with a Blood Lotus."

This time, Chu Luo was overcome with rage. She nearly spat out a mouthful of blood as she glared angrily at Gu Ruoyun. She then gritted her teeth and said, "Get your Master to come out and meet me! I don't want to speak to a servant girl."

"Auntie, is there something wrong with your hearing? My Master has already told you that she's the Master of this palace. Is your hearing deteriorating with age?"

Someone giggled childishly beside Gu Ruoyun. Chu Luo turned around in anger and glared at the little lolita next to the woman. If it was not for her curiosity about the identity of the Master of this palace, she would never have stayed here and be humiliated.

"Hmph! Stop getting in my way!" Chu Luo scoffed. "You think that I don't know that the Master of this palace is a man? Besides, this woman has only just reached the exceptional state. She's not even at the refined state and you insist on lying to me by saying that she's the Master of this place?"

Chu Luo treated the Little Vermillion Bird's words with contempt and stared at Gu Ruoyun with disdain.

"She's right."

At that moment, Zi Yun and the others had just rushed over. When they entered the drawing room, they overheard the conversation between Chu Luo and the Vermillion Bird and could not help but chime in.

"Order Master Chu Luo, Lord Qianbei has handed this place over to our Master. From now on, she is our leader! Hence, she's the Master of this palace!" Zi Yun smiled icily as he stared at Chu Luo.

"What did you just say?"

Chu Luo's expression changed drastically. Even though she has never met Qianbei Ye before, she was familiar with his subordinates.

Yet, even these people were stepping out to prove that this little girl was the Master of this palace?

"Hehe!"

Suddenly, she laughed and her smile was filled with disdain and ridicule. "I never thought that you'd pledge your loyalty to this little girl who still smells of her mother's milk. What benefits can she bring you? Are you really going to serve someone who is less powerful than you?"

Zi Yun and the rest looked at each other upon hearing this. It was true, they had refused to serve Gu Ruoyun in the beginning because this woman's power was inferior to theirs.

However...

Once they recalled the events which had happened yesterday, the crowd instantly shivered. Gu Ruoyun's rank was not much higher than theirs but her skills in battle have far surpassed their own.

"Order Master Chu Luo, as the Ghost Order's Master, you have our respect. However, that does not mean that we can tolerate your slander against our Master!"

The crowd was enraged. After all, Gu Ruoyun had already bribed them thoroughly with pills.

How could they allow anyone to hurl insults at her?

Chu Luo's face stiffened, she never thought that these people would stand up for Gu Ruoyun.

"I was only speaking without thinking." Chu Luo looked somewhat embarrassed. "This time, I had come here to see... Err... Your previous Master. That silver-haired man in red. Can you ask him to come out for a while?"

Honestly, Chu Luo was really curious about Qianbei Ye's identity especially since he had managed to build such a large palace in the space of just one month. Furthermore, his neighboring organizations did not have the courage to offend him.

Hence, she really wanted to find out where this man had come from.

# Chapter 1295: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order

## (2)

---

"I'm sorry, Lord Qianbei isn't here. Order Master Chu Luo, please go back."

Zi Yun laughed icily as he cruelly showed her out the door.

Chu Luo's expression was turning increasingly ugly. She had come here to see Qianbei Ye but not only was she unable to see him at all, even the Blood Lotus, which she had to spend a lot of money to purchase, had been snatched away by this woman! When was she, Chu Luo, ever willing to make business at a loss?

"It's fine if you won't let me see him!"

Chu Luo raised her head and declared angrily. "Give me back the Blood Lotus and I'll leave right now!"

"Do you really think that it's possible to take back something which is already in my possession?" Gu Ruoyun stared at Chu Luo's furious expression as she calmly smirked and asked with a tight smile, "I'd like to know if this big Blood Lotus could possibly choke me to death."

She had said all this to make Chu Luo choke on her own words. Gu Ruoyun's eyes, which were filled with ridicule, made Chu Luo's fury pierce through the skies. Her beautiful face turned chilly.

"What do you mean? You refused to let me see the person and you've also robbed me of my possession? Do you think that I, the Ghost Order's Master, is someone who could be so easily oppressed? Let me tell you this, give the Blood Lotus back to me this instant or else..."

Thump!

She slammed her hand on the desk and broke it immediately. She then angrily rose to her feet and glared fiercely at Gu Ruoyun.



Gu Ruoyun glanced at the broken desk and calmly curled the corners of her lips. "It seems that the Ghost Order's Master takes pleasure in destroying things. However, I've mentioned that the items in my palace are extremely valuable. I wonder how much do you intend on compensating me for this?"

Chu Luo instantly rolled her eyes. She has experienced shameless behavior from others before but she has never met anyone quite as shameless as this. This fellow was clearly trying to rob her!

It would be a waste of her unscrupulous business nature if she does not venture into business!

"I know that you don't have a lot of money on you now." Gu Ruoyun smirked. "Do you plan on signing a contract or should I continue to search you for other items?"

Chu Luo quickly took several steps back, afraid that this woman would notice the treasures hidden on her body.

Was she born in the year of the dog? Her nose is more sensitive than a dog's!

"Tell me, how much should I pay you this time?"

Chu Luo had to grit her teeth to say this. Her eyes were spitting fire and she had never been so uncomfortable in her life.

"Not much." Gu Ruoyun shook her head and replied with a half smile. "One million gold pieces."

"What?"

Chu Luo jumped with shock and cried out angrily, "One million gold pieces, why don't you just rob me?"

"This table of mine was made from the most expensive Western Wood. Not only can it help put one's worries to rest, it can also help to solidify a cultivator's cultivation base. You should know the value of Western Wood! Do you think that one million gold pieces is an expensive price for this table?"

This palace was a gift from Qianbei Ye so every single piece of it would be the best of the best. It was obvious that the table would be made out of a mythical type of wood.

"Hmph!"

Chu Luo sat down, scoffed and said, "I'm not going give you that kind of money!"

Besides, based on this woman's level of power, she would not be able to kill her!

"If you don't have the money..." Gu Ruoyun narrowed her eyes before a cold and sharp light flashed across them. "Then compensate for it with your body!"

Chu Luo was shaken, she looked at the elegant woman in green before her and blinked in astonishment.

# Chapter 1296: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order

## (3)

---

"What are you planning to do?"

Chu Luo jumped with fright as Gu Ruoyun walked closer towards her. She quickly covered her breasts and exclaimed with an ugly look on her face, "I'm not interested in women, don't you dare do anything to me you damned pervert!"

Chu Luo was clearly frightened into a daze.

What does she mean by 'use my body as compensation'?

I never thought that this woman, who looked so quiet and mild-mannered, would turn out to be such a huge pervert! She even wants to have my body. She must be dreaming!

"Let me tell you that if you take one step closer, I won't show you any courtesy!"

Boom!

A powerful, monstrous energy exploded from Chu Luo's body. Her entire being was like a shocked little tiger glaring cautiously at Gu Ruoyun. Suddenly, she felt great regret for setting foot into this palace.

Not only had she been unable to meet its true Master, she has even provoked a pervert!

It was a good thing that this woman was not all that powerful. If Gu Ruoyun should ever have the audacity to molest her, she would slaughter her immediately!

Gu Ruoyun was shocked. Pervert? Since when have I turned into a pervert?

Unable to understand the matter, Gu Ruoyun did not look too much into it and curled the corners of her lips indifferently, "Chu

Luo, since you're here, you can forget about leaving. I want your Ghost Order for myself so from now on, they will listen to my orders and you will stay by my side and do my bidding."

This time, even Zi Yun and the rest were in shock. Everyone stared at Gu Ruoyun in astonishment.

What did she just say? To have the Ghost Order's Master pledge loyalty to her?

After all, the Ghost Order's Master is already a cultivator at the refined state. How could Gu Ruoyun possibly subdue her?

"Haha," Chu Luo burst into laughter after recovering from her shock. There was a sense of contempt in her laugh. "Am I hearing this right? You want me to serve you? Little maiden, I think you'd better go into closed door cultivation for a few more years. Do you really think that you can have my loyalty based on your abilities?"

Gu Ruoyun raised her brow and looked at Chu Luo, "Even if you don't want to serve me, you don't have a choice. It's your fault for drinking my Devil Sect's tea."

"What do you mean?"

Chu Luo's expression changed drastically as she glared angrily at Gu Ruoyun.

"What do I mean?" Gu Ruoyun chuckled. "You can try your luck now and see if anything feels different."

Upon hearing this, Chu Luo quickly sat down and crossed her legs without another word, trying to mobilize her aura. However, when she tried to mobilize her aura, a heartrending pain rose from within her. The pain was so great that she furrowed her willowy brows. Her beautiful and exquisite face instantly turned pale.

"What have you done to me?"

Chu Luo clenched her fist as she bellowed at Gu Ruoyun angrily.

"I've told you, I want you to serve me." Gu Ruoyun stared at Chu

Luo indifferently. "This is the price you have to pay for eyeing my man."

"You're despicable!"

Chu Luo spat angrily. She had only felt an interest towards the Master of this palace so she had come over several times for a visit. Yet, not only was she unable to even see that man's face, she has even lost her freedom.

This was indeed the depiction of 'a single slip may cause lasting sorrow'!

"I'll give you one last chance, do you want to die from the poison or serve me?" Gu Ruoyun stared at the extremely ugly expression on Chu Luo's exquisite face with a tight smile. Her eyes were as cold as ice.

Chu Luo took a deep breath.

What other choice do I have now?

That heartrending pain was so real that even my breathing has become abnormal.

If I don't serve her, I might end up dying from the poison in the future! If I do serve her, I would lose my freedom for the rest of my life but at least I'd be alive...

# Chapter 1297: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order

## (4)

---

Chu Luo was very clear of the circumstances after weighing the pros and cons.

"You are sinister!" She glared at Gu Ruoyun once again, gritted her teeth and said, "Fine, I'll serve you."

This woman is simply too vicious!

Gu Ruoyun smiled. It goes without saying that her harvest was rather bountiful today, she has even gained Chu Luo's loyalty!

With the addition of the Ghost Order, the power that she holds can only grow stronger...

"Xiao Ye," Gu Ruoyun lowered her eyelids. She thought about that man's peerless features and curled her lips. "I won't let you face everything on your own so I must expand my power. This is the only way for me to stand by your side and face all obstacles with you."

Instead of relying on him to deal with everything on his own...

"Then again, I wonder where Xiao Ye is now? Has he found my big brother?"

Gu Ruoyun's eyes turned towards the dark night outside the window and her gaze was filled with a faint longing...

...

The Celestial Mountain.

Many people were coming and going to a mountain range near the Secret Order. The place was bustling unusually with excitement. Even the tea house at the foot of the mountain which usually serves as a rest stop for tourists has become overcrowded, filled with noisy chatter.

"Have you heard of the Secret Order? I've heard the elders of my family mention them before. They say that the Secret Order has been around for over ten thousand years and has always stayed hidden from the world. No one knows how powerful the Secret Order is and we don't know why they have revealed themselves to the world and advertised for organizations to enter the Secret Order for cultivation."

"Honestly, I've never heard of the Secret Order until now. However, I reckon that everyone in the First City will know about this organization now."

"Speaking of, who do you think is more powerful — the Governor's Palace of First City or the Secret Order?"

"It's not a good comparison but I would assume that the Governor's Palace is more powerful. If the Secret Order is really all that great, they would be the ones in charge of managing First City, not the Governor's Palace..."

The crowd nodded.

Even though the Secret Order has remained hidden from the world for many years, this does not mean that their power surpasses the Governor's Palace. If the members of the Secret Order were all so powerful, the Governor's Palace would not be the ones managing the First City now...

"The Secret Order?"

A green-robed woman who had been sipping her tea in the corner with her head lowered raised her brow and calmly murmured, "I had rushed over here at first because I had heard about Xiao Ye's reappearance but I never thought that I would end up running into the Secret Order's competition."

It has been half a year!

Half a year has passed since she had subdued the Ghost Order. Over this period of time, she had constantly kept an ear out for

news of Qianbei Ye's whereabouts. When she heard that a silver-haired man in crimson robes had appeared near Celestial Mountain, she had immediately rushed right over with her men.

"What kind of a place is the Secret Order?"

A man dressed in a purple jacket who was standing next to her furrowed his brows and asked skeptically, "Why have I never heard of this organization?"

"Hehe, based on your position, how could you possibly know of an organization which has been hidden from the world? You'd better go back and cultivated a little more. Once you've reached a more powerful level, you'll know about those who would outmatch all the other organizations of the world!"



# Chapter 1298: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order

## (5)

---

The person who had spoken was a woman dressed in black robes. She has exquisitely beautiful features and her curved, willowy brow was raised upwards as she stared disdainfully at the man in the purple jacket.

"Chu Luo, don't forget, we now hold the same position. We are both loyal to the Master and your status is no more valuable than mine!" Zi Yun scoffed as he replied contemptuously.

Ever since Chu Luo has been subdued by Gu Ruoyun, both she and Zi Yun have been squabbling every day, unable to cooperate with each other.

Chu Luo would never have acted so courteously to Zi Yun most of the time. However, because they were now in front of Gu Ruoyun, she could only glare at him no matter how angry she was feeling.

"If we aren't right in front of our Master, I would turn you into a corpse for your audacity in talking to me that way!"

"It's because of our Master's presence that I would dare to treat you this way!" Zi Yun's mouth twitched and he retorted irritably.

Was there not a saying that goes, 'a dog threatens based on its master's power'?

He admits to being Gu Ruoyun's dog so what was wrong with borrowing a bit of her awe-inspiring presence to scold Chu Luo? As long as Gu Ruoyun was here, Chu Luo could not lay a finger on him no matter how angry she was!

"You're just a dog who threatens based on his master's power!"

This phrase instantly popped up in Chu Luo's mind. She then glared angrily at Zi Yun before turning away towards Gu Ruoyun and said, "Master, have you ever heard of this Secret Order? I have

some knowledge in this area. It is said that the Secret Order is very powerful and even the Governor of First City would have to give way to the Secret Order. Besides, the mountain where the Secret Order is based in is very suitable for a cultivator's cultivation process. If you could cultivate there, half the battle would be won."

"More importantly..." Chu Luo paused, "The Secret Order holds an inheritance. Each talented disciple of the Secret Order would receive this inheritance upon reaching a certain stage. Hence, this was how the members of the Secret Order have managed to grow so quickly. With the additional nurturing from countless treasures, the Secret Order holds an unshakeable position. However, this Secret Order has always remained hidden the world. I don't know what has happened this time which would cause the Secret Order to return to the eyes of the world and begin to recruit geniuses."

Gu Ruoyun fell silent for a moment, no one could tell what was hidden behind those eyes.

After a long pause, she calmly replied, "I'm rather interested in this competition."

"Master?" Chu Luo was a little shocked. Isn't Master here to find her man? Why is she interested in a competition like this all of a sudden?

Gu Ruoyun's eyes gleamed with determination as she glanced out the window and slowly replied, "My powers are still not strong enough, I'm afraid that I'm still only a burden to Xiao Ye. Perhaps, entering the Secret Order is an opportunity for me. Only when I increase my powers can I fight with him shoulder-to-shoulder and face all the dangers together!"

Chu Luo felt shocked, she has always assumed that Gu Ruoyun was nothing more than Qianbei Ye's woman and had to depend on his abilities to obtain Zi Yun and the others. Chu Luo never thought that Gu Ruoyun would have such ambition and refuse to only be protected by him. Instead, she wants to walk side-by-side

with him!

Chu Luo had always looked down on Gu Ruoyun from the very beginning.

After all, her powers were so weak that they were almost insignificant!

Chu Luo simply could not understand why a powerful cultivator would want a woman like this? That he would even surrender his own power to her?

Now she knows that though this woman may not be very powerful, she has an aura that no one else could surpass! This type of aura could not even be surpassed by a sovereign who has descended from the sky!

# Chapter 1299: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order

## (6)

---

A person with weak powers is not a terrible thing. The terrible thing would be if that person does not have any intentions of growing stronger!

Upon hearing Gu Ruoyun's words, Chu Luo slowly began to change her point of view. Her eyes no longer held her initial disdain.

"It's the members of the Secret Order."

Suddenly, someone spoke and attracted the attention of everyone in the tea house. The crowd all turned to look at the new arrivals.

Everyone watched excitedly as a white-robed man slowly glided like a deity into the area, followed closely by a group of people dressed in white robes as well. However, it was very obvious that those other people do not have a high position like the man in white.

Next to him was an attractive and dignified woman. The woman's eyes were as pretty as a picture while her facial features were exquisite and moving. She was dressed in light yellow robes which emphasized her elegant posture and a violet sash was wrapped around her waist, flowing gracefully.

"It's Wen Ya, the Eldest Lady of the Wen family. Looks like she's with an emissary of the Secret Order."

The crowd stared at the group who had just walked in. However, when they noticed the warning looks from the members of the Secret Order, they quickly shut their mouths but continued to analyze them curiously.

"Zuo Shi." Wen Ya took a seat near Gu Ruoyun's position. There was a graceful smile on her delicate and dignified features. "The Wen family will certainly join the Secret Order's competition. I

hope that you can be a little more flexible when the time comes, Zuo Shi."

The man who had been addressed as Zuo Shi nodded. "Knowing the Wen family's power, you should be able to win very easily. The Secret Order has also determined that the first three winners can enter the Secret Order for cultivation. Besides..."

Zuo Shi paused for a moment, there was a rather unnatural expression in his eyes.

"How is Yue'er?"

Wen Ya looked at Zuo Shi's unnatural expression. A light flashed in her beautiful eyes as she smiled gracefully, "Don't worry, Zuo Shi. Little Sister Yue'er is definitely doing alright. Besides, she has been yearning for you, Lord Zuo Shi. Once the Wen family has successfully gone through this competition, I'll send Little Sister Yue'er right over."

Not too long ago, Wen Ya had found out that Wen Yue and Zuo Shi had been acquainted with each other for a long time ago. However, they were not aware of each other's identity. Hence, after she had discovered this, she purposely arranged for them to meet again and exposed their identities.

This has all been for the sake of using Wen Yue to pin him down so that the Wen family could seize the brightest and the best out of this competition.

Indeed, upon hearing Wen Ya's reply, a hint of joy flashed in Zuo Shi's eyes but he did not show any expression on his face. He only nodded calmly and said, "Don't worry, I'll deal with this. Besides, the Wen family has always been powerful. This will not be a problem."

If the Wen family's power was only average at best, Zuo Shi would never have found the courage to help them cheat. However, since the Wen family was already very powerful, it would not be an

issue even if they became the champions.

After all, only the champions could accept the Secret Order's inheritance.

Those from the other ranks would only receive merit for entering the Secret Order.

"Then I thank you very much, Lord Zuo Shi."

Wen Ya smiled. Though her smile was graceful and moving, her beautiful eyes contained a vicious light.

They had placed a protective cover in their surroundings during their discussion so they were not too worried about being overheard. Unfortunately, they did not know that Gu Ruoyun was in this tea house as well.

Hence, she had overheard every single thing in the conversation between the two.

# Chapter 1300: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order

## (7)

---

Gu Ruoyun raised her brows and there was a smile in her eyes. She never thought that it would really turn out to be a case of 'enemies on a narrow road' and that she would end up bumping into the Wen family members here.

Furthermore, the Wen family would become her opponents after this!

"Master, what's going on?" Chu Luo stared curiously at Gu Ruoyun.

She could not understand why Gu Ruoyun's smile has suddenly turned cold.

"It's nothing."

Gu Ruoyun turned away and gently sipped her tea. A light flashed in her eyes as she laughed icily. "I'm afraid that this competition won't be so easy! Chu Luo, you must be prepared."

Chu Luo stared at Gu Ruoyun in astonishment. She's saying that this competition isn't going to be so easy? What does she mean by that?

However, Gu Ruoyun was not inclined to answer Chu Luo's questions and entered into deep thought...

...

"Open the door."

A woman dressed in light yellow robes walked towards the prison cell and ordered the guards to open the door.

"Yes, Eldest Lady."

The guard pulled out a key and unlocked an iron chain. The door to the prison cell then opened with a loud creak...

An ethereal and beautiful woman was sitting on a stone bench in the prison cell. Her gaze was passive as she stared blankly at the cell's door. She did not even react when someone else walked in. Her noble little face was extremely pale and filled with misery.

"Wen Yue, have you thought it over?"

Wen Ya walked into the cell and her gaze landed upon her half-sister. A cold sneer formed on her graceful features as she asked, "Will you marry Zuo Shi or not? He's a member of the Secret Order after all. If you marry him, the Wen family will establish a connection with the Secret Order."

Wen Yue was shaken. She turned around, unwilling to look at the sneering woman.

"Zuo Shi is very interested in you. Besides, Grandfather intends to use you to get onboard this ship!" Wen Ya approached Wen Yue, carefully observing the ethereal-looking face before her. "If you refuse, you will stay in this cell for the rest of your life. Besides, I've already promised Zuo Shi that if he helps the Wen family to gain the first place in the competition, I'll send you to the Secret Order! By then, you will certainly become his woman!"

Wen Yue bit her lip. Perhaps out of all the regrets she's ever had in this lifetime, none surpassed her acquaintance with Zuo Shi.

It has exposed the true nature of these greedy people who actually want to gift her to Zuo Shi from the Secret Order...

"Wen Yue, are you still thinking about that kid, Gu Shengxiao?" Wen Ya laughed icily. Her voice was filled with disdain. "What's so good about that kid? Nothing about him is any better than the prestige of Zuo Shi from the Secret Order! You've received Zuo Shi's favor, who is soon about to become a disciple of the Secret Order, the number one force in the mainland! By then, even the Governor would need to give us leeway! As for Gu Shengxiao..."

Wen Ya laughed scornfully, "Because of the special circumstances



of his physique, Grandfather wants to capture him and bring him back to the Wen family. He had even manipulated the Lin family to carry out that deed! However, what's so great about his special characteristics? He's still nothing compared to the prestige of the Secret Order! But instead, what had you done? After Grandfather had managed to capture Gu Shengxiao, you had secretly allowed him to escape! If it hadn't been for you, the Wen family would have refined Gu Shengxiao into a puppet long ago!"

Wen Yue still refused to speak as if she did not hear Wen Ya's voice at all. Her eyes continued to stare emptily at the prison door, no one could tell what she was thinking.

"Yue'er, did you think that Gu Shengxiao would actually be grateful to you for setting him free? That man's body is special. Grandfather had discovered his existence through the Wen family's Puppet Book! Unfortunately, Grandfather could not do this personally and had no choice but to leave the Lin family to deal with this matter. Who would have thought that those good-for-nothings of the Lin family would turn out to be completely useless? In the end, I could no longer tolerate it and personally captured him and brought him back home!"

# Table of Contents

[Evil Emperor's Wild Consort](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 1201: Ruins, Inheritance \(18\)](#)

[Chapter 1202: Ruins, Inheritance \(19\)](#)

[Chapter 1203: Ruins, Inheritance \(20\)](#)

[Chapter 1204: Wind Valley \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 1205: Wind Valley \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 1206: Wind Valley \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 1207: Wind Valley \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 1208: Wind Valley \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 1209: Wind Valley \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 1210: Wind Valley \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 1211: Wind Valley \(8\)](#)

[Chapter 1212: Wind Valley \(9\)](#)

[Chapter 1213: Wind Valley \(10\)](#)

[Chapter 1214: Wind Valley \(11\)](#)

[Chapter 1215: Wind Valley \(12\)](#)

[Chapter 1216: Wind Valley \(13\)](#)

[Chapter 1217: Wind Valley \(14\)](#)

[Chapter 1218: Wind Valley \(15\)](#)

[Chapter 1219: Wind Valley \(16\)](#)

[Chapter 1220: Wind Valley \(17\)](#)

[Chapter 1221: Wind Valley \(18\)](#)

[Chapter 1222: Wind Valley \(19\)](#)

[Chapter 1223: Wind Valley \(20\)](#)

[Chapter 1224: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 1225: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 1226: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 1227: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 1228: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 1229: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 1230: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 1231: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday \(8\)](#)

[Chapter 1232: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday \(9\)](#)

[Chapter 1233: Feng Xiaoxiao's Birthday \(10\)](#)

[Chapter 1234: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 1235: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 1236: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 1237: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 1238: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 1239: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 1240: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 1241: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(8\)](#)

[Chapter 1242: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(9\)](#)

[Chapter 1243: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(10\)](#)

[Chapter 1244: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(11\)](#)

[Chapter 1245: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(12\)](#)

[Chapter 1246: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(13\)](#)

[Chapter 1247: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(14\)](#)

[Chapter 1248: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(15\)](#)

[Chapter 1249: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(16\)](#)

[Chapter 1250: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(17\)](#)

[Chapter 1251: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(18\)](#)

[Chapter 1252: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(19\)](#)

[Chapter 1253: A Family Reunited, Except Shengxiao \(20\)](#)

[Chapter 1254: Lin Family, Revenge \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 1255: Lin Family, Revenge \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 1256: Lin Family, Revenge \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 1257: Lin Family, Revenge \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 1258: Lin Family, Revenge \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 1259: Lin Family, Revenge \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 1260: Lin Family, Revenge \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 1261: Lin Family, Revenge \(8\)](#)

[Chapter 1262: Lin Family, Revenge \(9\)](#)

[Chapter 1263: Lin Family, Revenge \(10\)](#)

[Chapter 1264: Love Rival \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 1265: Love Rival \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 1266: Love Rival \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 1267: Love Rival \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 1268: Love Rival \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 1269: Love Rival \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 1270: Love Rival \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 1271: Love Rival \(8\)](#)

[Chapter 1272: Love Rival \(9\)](#)  
[Chapter 1273: Love Rival \(10\)](#)  
[Chapter 1274: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 1275: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 1276: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 1277: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 1278: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(5\)](#)  
[Chapter 1279: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(6\)](#)  
[Chapter 1280: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(7\)](#)  
[Chapter 1281: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(8\)](#)  
[Chapter 1282: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(9\)](#)  
[Chapter 1283: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(10\)](#)  
[Chapter 1284: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(11\)](#)  
[Chapter 1285: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(12\)](#)  
[Chapter 1286: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(13\)](#)  
[Chapter 1287: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(14\)](#)  
[Chapter 1288: Exceptional State, Early Stage \(15\)](#)  
[Chapter 1289: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(16\)](#)  
[Chapter 1290: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(17\)](#)  
[Chapter 1291: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(18\)](#)  
[Chapter 1292: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(19\)](#)  
[Chapter 1293: Early-Stage Exceptional State \(20\)](#)  
[Chapter 1294: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 1295: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 1296: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 1297: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 1298: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order \(5\)](#)  
[Chapter 1299: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order \(6\)](#)  
[Chapter 1300: Chu Luo Of The Ghost Order \(7\)](#)